

J. J. BRAUN.

MILWAUKEE GRAMMAR SCHOOL
ENGLISH.

L47

324

22 1/2 - 600

Febrero 1864

NUEVA GRAMÁTICA INGLESA.

CURSO TEÓRICO-PRÁCTICO

POR

J. J. BRAUN,

DR. EN FILOSOFÍA Y PROFESOR DE HEBREO, ALEMÁN É INGLÉS EN EL REAL SEMINARIO
Y COLEGIO DE SAN LORENZO DEL ESCORIAL.

«LONGUM ITER PER PRAECEPTA,
BREVE ET EFFICAX PER EXEMPLA.»
SENECA.

MADRID: 1864.

LIBRERIA DE A. DURAN.

CRA. DE S. GERÓNIMO 2

9.061
1906
1872

5086



NUEVA
GRAMÁTICA INGLESA.

CURSO
TEÓRICO-PRÁCTICO

POR

J. J. BRAUN,

DR. EN FILOSOFÍA Y PROFESOR DE HEBREO, ALEMÁN É INGLÉS EN EL REAL SEMINARIO
Y COLEGIO DE SAN LORENZO DEL ESCORIAL,

«LONGUM ITER PER PRÆCEPTA,
BREVE ET EFFICAX PER EXEMPLA.»

SENeca.

5086

MADRID: 1865.
LIBRERIA DE A. DURAN.
CHA. DE S. GERÓNIMO 2.

LIBRO

GRAMMÁTICA INGLESA.

LIBRO

TECNOLOGIA

Es propiedad del autor.

LIBRO

50 76

MADRID 1865.

LIBRERIA DE SORDANA

DE LA PLAZA DE S. JUAN, 1.

A
SUS ALUMNOS

DEL

REAL SEMINARIO Y COLEGIO

DE

SAN LORENZO DEL ESCORIAL

DEDICA

ESTA OBRITA

EL AUTOR.

REVISTA DE LA

REVISTA DE LA

REVISTA DE LA

REVISTA DE LA

EL AUTOR
EL AUTOR

Al ofrecer, o jóvenes, este pequeño trabajo, quisiera también inspiraros el convencimiento de la grande utilidad y necesidad de que os ocupeis seriamente en el estudio de las lenguas extranjeras, y en especial de las principales de Europa. Los pueblos tienden cada vez mas á estrechar sus relaciones. Las fronteras no pueden ser un límite á las relaciones sociales del hombre, y mucho menos del hombre instruido, cuando en menos de dos dias se llega á grandes distancias. — Vosotros veis cada dia extranjeros deseosos de ilustrarse que llegan á visitar este grandioso monumento de la antigua gloria española (ya que solo recuerdos antiguos pueden visitarse en España); y podeis aprender de ellos, cuanto ilustra la vista material de los distintos pueblos, de sus instituciones, adelantos, industria, agricultura y artes; el conocimiento propio y en el propio idioma de su ciencia y literatura.

En cualquiera posicion social que os encontréis un dia, os felicitareis de lo que ahora os parece un trabajo sin recompensa proporcionada á su aridez, aunque esta no sea tal como os figurais. — Si sois hombres de estado, si os dedicais á las carreras facultativas, á la literatura, al comercio, á la industria: en todos los casos os habeis de encontrar en la posicion de conocer el estado de Europa en cada ramo de los conocimientos humanos y profesiones que adopteis.

Pues tened entendido que nada de esto se comprende por segunda mano. Casi todas las obras de instruccion científica y literaria que poseemos en España en la actualidad, sin exceptuar los libros de texto que todos los dias manejaís, están

inspiradas por obras extranjeras; si ya no son miserables rap-sodias de lo mas vulgar y lo mas inmundo que la Francia produce y en espíritu mercantil nos ofrece en una lengua parecida á la española. (Se entiende que hablo de tantas malas producciones).

¿Y que os diré de la filosofía en la que mas ó menos, y con justicia ó sin ella, se apoyan en la actualidad todas las teorías administrativas, jurídicas, políticas y religiosas? Aunque sea una verdad amarga, es, sin embargo, una verdad, que no podreis comprender nunca el estado actual de la filosofía y de las ciencias que en ella se fundan, no acudiendo á los pensadores extranjeros y leyendo sus libros.

Podria multiplicar estas consideraciones para animaros á ensanchar el horizonte de vuestra vida, y ayudaros á vencer una repugnancia, que mas tarde os seria fatal, pero no quiero ser molesto.

Una sola palabra á los Seminaristas. Vosotros no podeis carecer de conocimientos vulgarizados ya entre las gentes educadas; y tales son los del inglés, alemán, italiano y francés. Necesitais á todo trance iniciaros en las grandes controversias literarias, filosóficas y religiosas del dia, si quereis ser útiles á la Iglesia y á la Patria; preparaos, pues, con el estudio de las lenguas europeas. Es el camino mas corto, y tal vez el único.

Prólogo.

Llamo mi gramática teórico-práctica, porque me he apartado del método *Ollendorffiano*, el cual considera la lengua, por decirlo así, solo en su elemento *bruto*. La teoría es y será siempre la base de la enseñanza sólida; y junta á la práctica forma la perfeccion. No es este el lugar de hacer resaltar las ventajas y desventajas del método Ollendorff; solo diré que una experiencia de *doce años* me ha convencido de que dicho método no ofrece las ventajas que pudiera esperar el que estudia el inglés no solo para manejarlo prácticamente con mas ó menos perfeccion, sino tambien para apropiarse la literatura y las producciones científicas del pueblo inglés. — Tampoco quiero quitar al Dr. Ollendorff el mérito de la invencion de su método; pero debo observar que en el Escorial existe una gramática árabe, compuesta por Fray Pedro de Alcalá, escrita en el mismo método y publicada en el año 1501 bajo el título: “Arte de aprender ligeramente la Lengua aráviga, emendada, añadida y segundamente imprimida”, y dedicada á Talavera Arzobispo de Granada. ¿Porqué caeria en desuso este método?

Tampoco convengo en lo que dice *Ahn*: “Aprended una lengua extranjerá como habeis aprendido la vuestra.” El mismo *Ahn* no observa esa regla de la naturaleza, dando ya en las primeras páginas el tiempo pasado de muchos verbos irregulares; mientras que el niño no vive sino en el *tiempo pre-*

sente. ¿Y son niños todos los que aprenden un idioma extranjero? ¿Y sucede con los alumnos de un Colegio lo que sucede con un niño? El niño tiene lección *todos los dias y por todo el dia* con las personas con quienes se roza, mientras el alumno no tiene sino una hora diaria á lo mas, y esta no se dedica á uno solo, sino á veinte, treinta y mas alumnos. Sin la teoría, sin el estudio comparativo de la lengua extranjera con la suya propia, le sucederia lo que sucede á un niño, que, si bien sabe hablar su idioma, no sabria escribir composicion alguna, sin que le enseñasen la teoría. ¿Porqué no siguen este método mis compatriotas, los filólogos mas notables de Alemania? Me parecen, sin embargo, hombres de buen criterio en esta materia.

He dividido las diferentes partes del discurso en lecciones; no quiero decir que cada lección debe formar la tarea para una hora; el profesor hará aprender á los alumnos lo que mejor le parezca. No he añadido conversacion alguna, puesto que hay guias muy buenos y á precios módicos. — La segunda parte está escrita en un inglés muy fácil; he seguido enteramente á Lennie. Los verbos compuestos los enseñará el manejo de un buen diccionario y la lectura de algun buen autor, como los cuentos morales y muy variados de Mrs. Edgeworth y muchos otros. — En vista de la falta de alguna buena antología, he puesto al fin algunos trozos en prosa y poesía.

Ya ha aparecido mi gramática alemana; y bajo prensa están mis gramáticas griega y hebrea.

Si algun bien he hecho, para mis alumnos es el provecho y á Dios la gloria.

San Lorenzo del Escorial, Julio 1864.

J. J. Braun.

Índice.

| | Página. |
|---|---------|
| Dedicatoria | v |
| Prólogo | vii |
| Reglas para aprender á pronunciar la lengua inglesa | 1 |
| Leccion I. Del artículo definido y de la declinacion, formacion del plural, el presente de los verbos <i>to have</i> y <i>to be</i> | 7 |
| Leccion II. Del artículo indefinido; del presente de los verbos; de los sustantivos irregulares | 10 |
| Leccion III. Del artículo partitivo; de los adjetivos; del genitivo posesivo; de los sustantivos adjetivados | 13 |
| Leccion IV. Del uso del artículo; de los nombres propios | 16 |
| Leccion V. Del número; del género; de la interrogacion | 19 |
| Leccion VI. De los grados de comparacion | 22 |
| Leccion VII. De la formacion de algunos adjetivos, de su empleo; de los números cardinales | 26 |
| Leccion VIII. De la traduccion de hacer; de los números ordinales | 29 |
| Leccion IX. De los pronombres personales | 31 |
| Leccion X. De los pronombres posesivos y reflexivos | 34 |
| Leccion XI. De los pronombres relativos | 37 |
| Leccion XII. De los pronombres adjetivos | 40 |
| Leccion XIII. Observaciones sobre los pronombres | 43 |
| Leccion XIV. Observaciones sobre algunos adjetivos y sobre los adverbios calificativos | 46 |
| Leccion XV. Observaciones sobre el genitivo posesivo; las preposiciones <i>at</i> y <i>to</i> ; sobre el artículo indefinido etc. | 49 |
| Leccion XVI. De los Verbos; los auxiliares <i>to have</i> y <i>to be</i> ; observaciones generales | 51 |
| Leccion XVII. De los Verbos regulares; conjugacion, formacion de los tiempos | 60 |

| | Página. |
|--|---------|
| Leccion XVIII. Del gerundio, imperfecto y participio pasado; sobre <i>Shall</i> y <i>Will</i> ; <i>Should</i> y <i>Would</i> | 66 |
| Leccion XIX. Empleo del subjuntivo | 69 |
| Leccion XX. Los verbos irregulares | 72 |
| Leccion XXI. De los verbos reflexivos y recíprocos..... | 80 |
| Leccion XXII. De los verbos pasivos y del empleo del gerundio.. | 84 |
| Leccion XXIII. Observaciones generales sobre los verbos | 87 |
| Leccion XXIV. Sobre la traduccion del "que" español..... | 91 |
| Leccion XXV. Del empleo de los tiempos | 94 |
| Leccion XXVI. Sobre algunos modismos; las propiedades de animales | 98 |
| Leccion XXVII. De los adverbios: de tiempo, de lugar, de afirmacion, de negacion, de duda, de comparacion etc..... | 101 |
| Leccion XXVIII. De las preposiciones..... | 106 |
| Leccion XXIX. De las conjunciones é interjecciones | 114 |
| Leccion XXX. De los verbos compuestos y algunos modismos.... | 116 |
| Apéndice I. Vocabulario | 120 |
| Apéndice II. De los sinónimos | 136 |

Part II.

| | |
|--|-----|
| Definition of the English Grammar | 143 |
| Orthography | 143 |
| Of syllables and the rules for arranging them..... | 143 |
| Of words in general and the rules for spelling them..... | 144 |
| Etymology | 146 |
| Of the Articles | 146 |
| Of Nouns | 146 |
| Of Number | 147 |
| Of Gender | 147 |
| Of Case | 148 |
| Of Adjectives..... | 148 |
| Of Pronouns..... | 149 |
| Of the Personal Pronouns | 149 |
| Of the Relative Pronouns | 149 |
| Of the Adjective Pronouns..... | 150 |
| Of Verbs | 151 |
| Of Number and Person | 151 |
| Of Moods | 151 |
| Of Tenses..... | 152 |
| Of Will and Shall | 153 |
| Of Adverbs..... | 154 |

| | |
|---|-----|
| Of Prepositions | 155 |
| Of Conjunctions | 155 |
| Of Interjections | 156 |
| On Parsing | 156 |
| 1. & 2. On active verbs | 157 |
| 3. & 4. On neuter Verbs | 157 |
| 5. Different sorts of verbs in the imperative | 158 |
| 6. The nominative where placed | 159 |
| 7. The Nominative at a great distance from the verb | 159 |
| 8. The infinitive, or part of a sentence, is often the nominative to a verb | 160 |
| 9. When is the relative the nominative to a verb; when in the objective? | 160 |
| 10. The antecedent and the relative being in the nominative, the former belongs to the second verb; and the latter to the verb next it | 161 |
| 11. <i>What</i> is equal to <i>that which</i> , or <i>thing which</i> , and represents two cases; sometimes <i>two nominatives</i> ; sometimes <i>two objectives</i> ; sometimes a nominative and objective; sometimes it is an adjective | 161 |
| 12. The compound relatives, <i>whoever</i> and <i>whosoever</i> are equal to <i>he who</i> ; <i>whatever</i> and <i>whatsoever</i> are equal to <i>the thing which</i> , and represent two cases like <i>what</i> , as before | 162 |
| 13. <i>Do</i> , <i>did</i> and <i>have</i> are auxiliary verbs when joined to another verb; when not joined to another verb, they are principal verbs etc. | 162 |
| 14. The verb <i>to be</i> has very often an adjective after it; etc. | 163 |
| 15. 1) Active and neuter verbs are often with their present participle joined to the verb <i>to be</i> . — 2) A noun is always understood when not expressed, after adjectives and adjective pronouns; such as, <i>few</i> , <i>many</i> , <i>this</i> , <i>that</i> etc. | 163 |
| 16. The past participle has uniformly either a relative or personal pronoun, with some part of the verb <i>to be</i> understood <i>before</i> it | 164 |
| 17. Supply all the words that are understood etc. | 164 |
| 18. 1) The Objective after an active verb, especially when a relative, is often understood. — 2) Sometimes the antecedent is improperly omitted and must be supplied | 165 |
| 19. 1) The objective case generally <i>after</i> the verb that governs it; but when a <i>relative</i> , and in some other <i>cases</i> , it comes <i>before</i> it. — 2) When two adjectives follow a verb, the <i>thing</i> is governed by the <i>verb</i> and the person by a <i>preposition</i> understood | 166 |
| 20. 1) The poets often use an adjective as a noun; and sometimes join an adjective to their new-made noun. — 2) They sometimes improperly use an adjective for an adverb. — Though the adjective generally comes before the noun, it is sometimes placed after it | 166 |

| | Página. |
|---|---------|
| Syntax..... | 167 |
| Promiscuous exercises on the rules of Syntax..... | 180 |
| Specimens of etymological parsing..... | 181 |
| Specimens of syntactical parsing..... | 182 |
| Punctuation..... | 183 |
| Abbreviations..... | 186 |
| Prosody..... | 187 |
| Select Pieces..... | 191 |
| Poetry..... | 205 |
| Cards..... | 239 |
| A practical mercantile Correspondence..... | 247 |
| Familiar correspondence..... | 254 |
| Letters on elocution..... | 255 |

Algunas Reglas

para aprender á pronunciar la Lengua Inglesa.

El alfabeto de la lengua inglesa se compone de veinte y seis letras que son:

| españ. | ingles. | españ. | ingles. |
|--------|-----------------------|--------|------------------------|
| A, a | = e (a) = (ai). | N, n | = en = (en). |
| B, b | = bi = (bee). | O, o | = o = (o). |
| C, c | = si = (see). | P, p | = pi = (pee). |
| D, d | = di = (dee). | Q, q | = kiu = (cue). |
| E, e | = i (e) = (ee). | R, r | = ar = (ar). |
| F, f | = eff = (ef). | S, s | = es = (ess). |
| G, g | = dchi = (jee). | T, t | = ti = (tee). |
| H, h | = ech = (aitch). | U, u | = iu = (u ó you). |
| I, i | = ai (i) = (i ó eye). | V, v | = vi = (vee). |
| J, j | = che = (jay). | W, w | = dobliu = (double u). |
| K, k | = ke, que = (kay). | X, x | = eks = (eks). |
| L, l | = el = (el). | Y, y | = uai = (why). |
| M, m | = em = (em). | Z, z | = sed = (zed). |

I. De las Vocales.

A tiene cuatro sonidos:

1. E cuando va seguida de una sola consonante con e muda final, v. g. *ale, plate, trade*; ó cuando termina una sílaba sobre la cual carga el acento: *paper, taper*. Se pronuncia como *ē* cuando es larga, v. g. *name, creation, basin*.

2. Suena como *a* cuando es breve, y en muchos monosílabos v. g. *path, last, glass*.

3. Tiene el sonido de ô en los monosílabos acabados en *ll, ld, lk, lt* y en los que principian por *w*; v. g. *all, call, wall, walk, wasp, salt*.

4. El cuarto sonido es algo oscuro entre *a* y *o*, ó casi *aa*, y no hay regla fija; *far, farm (fa'm), psalm (sa'm)*; pero *psalmist*.

E tiene tres sonidos distintos, largo, breve, oscuro.

E teniendo el sonido largo corresponde á *i*, v. g. *glebe; scheme*; y algunas veces á *i* breve: *England, me, pretty*.

El segundo, sonido breve, es igual á *e*; *men, bed, clemency*.

El tercero, sonido oscuro, parecido al francés *eur*, pero mucho mas breve; v. g. *her, abler, prettier*.

La *e* es muda en el final de una voz, *time, shine*.

La *e* final tiene un sonido casi imperceptible, 1) en las palabras acabadas en *le* precedida de otro consonante, v. g. *able = abël; conceivable = consivebël; people = pîpël*; 2) en las palabras derivadas del griego; *catastrophe, epitome*.

En los participios pasados no se percibe el sonido de la *e*, á menos que esté precedida de *d* ó *t*, *loved = lov'd; called = call'd; omitted = omittid*. *Clerk* y *sergeant* se pronuncian *clark* y *sarchent*.

I tiene tres sonidos.

1. Suena como *ai* en los monosílabos acabados en *nd, ld, ght*, y en los terminados en *e* muda; *kind, mild, night, time*.

EXCEPCION: las palabras en *shire* suenan como el *eur* francés; *Yorkshire; Devonshire*. Los palabras *wind, guild* y *build*, tienen el sonido de *i = ghild, bild*.

2. Suena como *i* en los monosílabos acabados en *ing, im, in, id* y *it*; *sing, ring, him, thin, split, bid*.

3. Suena casi como el *eur = æ* francés, seguida de una *r* con otra consonante; v. g. *first, bird, girl; fir*.

O tiene tres sonidos.

1. El sonido largo, como en: *note, obedient, over*.

2. El sonido breve, como en: *not, got, lot*.

3. Algunas veces suena como *æ* (eu francés ó *u* breve de los ingleses) como en: *son, some, love, glove*; y á veces como *u*: *prove, move*.

Se suprime en las sílabas finales sin acento, entra *c, ck* y *n*; *reckon = reck'n; bacon = bec'n*.

U tiene tambien tres sonidos:

1. El sonido largo, *iu*, en los monosílabos en *e* muda, ó en las palabras terminadas *ule* y *ute*; *mule*, *mute*, *acute*, *cubic*, *university*, *useful*, *useless*, *use*.

2. El sonido breve como *eu* en francés, pronunciado mas rápidamente: *urn*, *dull*, *but*, *shut*.

3. Suena como *u*: *full*, *pull*, *put*. Las palabras *business*, *busy*, *bury* y *burial* se pronuncian *bísi*, *bisness*, *beri* y *berial*.

Y tiene dos sonidos como vocal: suena como *ai*, ó como *í*, es decir entre *í* y *é*; *fly*, *cry*; pero *clemency*, *agreeably*.

W, tiene al fin de las palabras el sonido de *u* con pocas excepciones; así *crew* = *criu*, *view*; *now*, *town*, *vowel*. A menudo se junta á la *o* al fin de una sílaba sin afectar el sonido de esta vocal, v. g. *crow* = *crô*, *blow*, *show*, *grow*.

II. De los Diptongos.

Ae suena como *i*; *Cæsar* = *Sisar*.

Ai como *e*, *hair*; en la terminacion *ain*, la *a* es casi muda; *captain*.

Au suena generalmente como *oh*, *caught*, *taught*. *Laugh* = *laff*.

Aw suena siempre como *o*, *draw*, *saw*, *pshaw*.

Ea suena como *i*, como *e* y como *a*, no hay regla; *hear* = *hir*; *heard* = *herd*; *heart* = *hart*; *bear* = *bēr*; *hearth* = *harth*.

Ee suena como *i*; *deep*, *keep*, *sheep*.

Ei suena generalmente como *e*; *deign*, *vein*; suena como *i* en *either*, *neither*, *seize*, *receipt*, *ceiling*, *receive* y sus derivados.

Eo se pronuncia como *i*; *people*. Tambien tiene el sonido de la *u* breve; *dungeon*, *surgeon*.

Ey suena como *ei* en *dey*, *bey*; como *i* en *key*, *barley*, *valley*.

Eu y *ew* suena como *iu*: *few*, *feuds*.

Ia suena como *ie*; *christian*, *poniard*; tiene el sonido de *i* en *carriage*, *marriage*, *parliament*.

Ie suena generalmente como *i*; *thief*, *chief*. Como *ai*, si la palabra termina en *e* muda, *die*, *lie*; *friend* = *frend*.

Io forma dos sílabas, si el acento cae sobre *i*, v. g. *priority* = *prai-o-rity*; *violent* = *vai-o-lent*; en las demás una, *minion*. Las terminaciones *tion* y *sion* se pronuncian exactamente como el verbo *to shun*; *nation*, *occasion*; y las en *ation* y *stion* como *tshun*; *question* = *kues-tshun*; *mixture* = *mix-tshun*.

Oa suena como *o* larga; *boat*, *coat*; raras veces como *aw*; *broad*.

Oe suena como *e*; *faetid*; como *o* en *dæ*, *fæ*, *slæ*, *tæ*, *thræ* y *bilbaes*; como *u* en *canæ* y *shæ* y sus compuestos.

Oo suena como *u*, *fool*; excepto en *door*, *floor*; *blood* y *flood*.

Ou tiene seis sonidos y es el diptongo mas irregular. El sonido mas regular es *au*, *bound*, *found*, *sound*, *plough*.

El segundo es el de la *u* breve, *enough* = *enuff*; *trouble*.

El tercero es él de *u*; *youth*, *soup*.

El cuarto es él de *ō* larga; *though* (*thō*), *mourn*.

El quinto es el de *ö* breve, *cough*, *köff*.

El sexto es él de *awe*, *bought*, *thought*.

Ow ordinariamente se pronuncia como *au*; *down*, *brown*, *gown*, *shower*. Tambien es muda, *grow* = *gró*; *fellow*.

Ua suena como *ue*; *antiquary*. En *guard*, *guardian*, *guarantee* y *piquant* la *u* es muda.

Ue suena *ue* excepto en *conquer* = *konker*. Al fin de las palabras la *e* es muda y la *u* suena como *iu*; *hue*. En *guess* y *quest* la *u* es muda; y en *antique*, *fatigue*, *tongue*, *vague* é *intrigue*, *u* y *e* son mudas.

Ui, se pronuncian las dos vocales en *anguish*, *extinguish*, *distinguish*, *linguist*. Precedida de una *r* se pronuncia como *u*, *fruit* = *frut*. En *guide*, *disguise*, *guile* y *beguile* la *u* es muda y la *i* se pronuncia como *ai*; y en *juice*, *sluice* y *suitable* la *i* es muda, y la *u* = *iu*.

III. De las Consonantes.

B casi siempre es muda en final de palabra; tambien lo es en *debt*, *doubt*, *subtle*, *redoubt*.

C antes de *a*, *o*, *u* se pronuncia como en español, y ántes de *e*, *i*, y como *s*. En palabras italianas se pronuncia *ch* ántes

de *e* é *i*, v. g. *vermicelli*; si va seguida de *ea*, *ia*, *eous* é *io* equivale á *sh*; *ocean*. Es muda en: *muscle*, *czar*, *czarine*, *vic-tuals*, *arbuscle*, *corpuscle* é *indict*.

Ch se pronuncia como en español. En las palabras derivadas de las lenguas antiguas y en las que va seguida de *r* ó *l* se pronuncia como *k*; *school*, *Christ*, *ache* = *ék*.

Ch es muda en *schism* = *scism*; *yacht* y *drachm*.

G se pronuncia como en castellano delante de *a*; delante de *e*, *i* y *y* en las palabras derivadas del griego, latin ó francés, se pronuncia como *dch*; v. g. *apology*; *judge*; pero *give* = *guif*, del alemán.

G seguida de *n* ó *m* es generalmente muda; *sign* = *sain*.

H ordinariamente es aspirada; es muda despues de *r* y al fin de una palabra; igualmente en: *heir*, *heiress*, *honest*, *honour*, *humble*, *hospital*, *hour*, *hostler*.

K seguida de *n* al principio de las palabras es muda; *knight* = *nait*; *knee* = *nī*.

L es muda entre *a* y *k*; y *a* y *m*; *walk*, *balm*; pero si la *m* pertenece á la sílaba siguiente, se oye la *l*; *psal-mist*.

N tiene el sonido nasal en las palabras en *ing*, *ang*, *ung*, *ink*, *ank*, *unk*; *sing*, *sang*, *sung*; *thank*, *sunk*.

P es muda antes de *s* y *t* al principio de las palabras, v. g. *psalm*; se oye en las palabras derivadas del griego, como *psychology*; tambien es muda entre *m* y *p*; *tempt* etc.

Ph equivale á *f*; *nephew*, *philosophy*.

Re al fin suena muchas veces como *er*; *theatre* = *theatër*.

S tiene la articulacion suave y áspera. Áspera al principio de las palabras y en el medio cuando esté precedida de una consonante; en los demas casos se pronuncia suave.

Sh suena como *ch* en francés, sonido silbante; *ship*.

T, seguida de *ia*, *ie*, *io*, *iu*, se pronuncia como *sh*; *patient*; seguida de *u* como *tch*; *nature* = *netchiür*.

Th generalmente suena como la *z* española. Tiene el sonido suave y áspero; suave entre dos vocales, *father*, *mother*; excepto en los derivados del griego: *apathy*. Al principio de las palabras es generalmente áspera, excepto en *thus*, *this*, *that*, *than* etc. En *Thomas*, *Thames*, *thyme* y *asthma* se pronuncia como *t*.

V se pronuncia como en español; algunas veces como *f*; *appröve*.

W suena como *u*, se pronuncia mas rápidamente; *water* = *uater*. Siempre es muda ántes de *r*; *write*, *wrap*; tambien es muda en *answer*, *sword*, *towards*, *who*, *whole*, *wholesome*.

X tiene el sonido áspero cuando termina una sílaba en que carga el acento; *exit* = *eks-it*; ó si la sílaba siguiente empieza con una consonante, *extent* = *eks-tent*. Si la sílaba no tiene el acento ó la siguiente empieza con vocal, tiene el sonido suave de *gs*, *exert* = *egsert*; *example* = *egsampël*. El sonido de *x* se convierte casi en *s* en los nombres propios de origen griego: *Xanthus*; *Xerxes*.

Z se pronuncia como una *s* suave.

PRIMERA PARTE.

Leccion I.

Del Artículo definido y de la declinacion.

1. El artículo definido *the* nunca varía en inglés; es el mismo en todos los números, en todos los géneros y en todos los casos de los nombres; se declina con las preposiciones *of* y *to*.

| Singular. | Plural. |
|-------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| N. El, la, lo <i>the</i> | Los, las <i>the</i> |
| G. Del, de la, de lo <i>of the</i> | De los, de las <i>of the</i> |
| D. Al, á la, á lo <i>to the</i> | A los, á las <i>to the</i> |
| Ac. Al, el, á la, la, lo <i>the</i> | Á los, los, á las, las <i>the</i> . |

2. El plural de los sustantivos ingleses se forma generalmente añadiendo una *s* al singular.

| Singular. | Plural. |
|------------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| N. El padre, <i>the father</i> | Los padres, <i>the fathers</i> |
| G. Del padre, <i>of the father</i> | De los padres, <i>of the fathers</i> |
| D. Al padre, <i>to the father</i> | A los padres, <i>to the fathers</i> |
| Ac. Al padre, <i>the father.</i> | A los padres, <i>the fathers.</i> |

Declinen los alumnos de este modo:

| | |
|--------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| El hermano, <i>the brother</i> | La hermana, <i>the sister</i> |
| La madre, <i>the mother</i> | El rey, <i>the king</i> |
| El obispo, <i>the bishop</i> | La reyna, <i>the queen</i> |
| La pluma, <i>the pen.</i> | El libro, <i>the book.</i> |

3. Los sustantivos acabados en *y* cambian la *y* en el plural en *ies*, cuando va precedida de una consonante, pero cuando está precedida de una vocal siguen la regla general, tomando una *s*.

| | |
|------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| La señora, <i>the lady</i> | las señoras, <i>the ladies</i> |
| El muchacho, <i>the boy.</i> | los muchachos, <i>the boys.</i> |

4. Los sustantivos acabados en *ch, sh, s, x, ú o* forman el plural añadiendo la sílaba *es* al singular.

| | |
|-------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| La iglesia, <i>the church</i> | las iglesias, <i>the churches</i> |
| Deseo, <i>wish</i> | deseos, <i>wishes</i> |
| Vaso, <i>glass</i> | vasos, <i>glasses</i> |
| Caja, <i>box</i> | cajas, <i>boxes</i> . |
| El negro, <i>the negro</i> . | los negros, <i>the negroes</i> . |

OBSERVACION: A los sustantivos terminados en *o* se añade á veces una *s* sola, especialmente si son derivados del italiano, como: *seraglio, seraglios; folio, folios*.

5. Los sustantivos acabados en *f ó fe* forman el plural cambiando la *f ó fe* en *ves*; como:

| Singular. | Plural. |
|--------------------------------|-----------------|
| Un pan (entero), <i>loaf</i> , | <i>loaves</i> |
| Ternero, <i>calf</i> , | <i>calves</i> |
| Mitad, <i>half</i> , | <i>halves</i> |
| Esposa, <i>wife</i> , | <i>wives</i> |
| Vida, <i>life</i> , | <i>lives</i> |
| Lobo, <i>wolf</i> , | <i>wolves</i> . |

6. Exceptúanse de esta regla los acabados en *ff, oof, ief, rf*, que siguen la regla general.

| | |
|--------------------------------|------------------------|
| Pañuelo, <i>handkerchief</i> , | <i>handkerchiefs</i> . |
| Enano, <i>dwarf</i> , | <i>dwarfs</i> . |
| Techo, <i>roof</i> , | <i>roofs</i> . |

OBSERVACION: Solo *thief*, ladrón, hace en el plural *thieves*, y *staff*, palo, bastón, hace *staves* y *staffs*. Los sustantivos que no siguen ninguna de las mencionadas reglas, son enteramente irregulares.

7. La oracion completa en inglés siempre necesita de un nominativo expreso, excepto en el imperativo.

8. El infinitivo absoluto siempre va acompañado de la partícula *to*.

| | |
|----------------------------------|----------------------|
| Tener ó haber, | <i>to have.</i> |
| Yo tengo ó hé, | <i>I have.</i> |
| Tú tienes ó has, | <i>thou hast.</i> |
| El ó ella tiene etc. | <i>he ó she has.</i> |
| Nosotros (-as) tenemos, | <i>we have.</i> |
| Vosotros (-as) teneis, V. tiene, | <i>you have.</i> |
| Ellos, ellas tienen, | <i>they have.</i> |

| | |
|-----------------------------|---------------------|
| Ser ó estar, | <i>to be.</i> |
| Yo soy, estoy, | <i>I am.</i> |
| Tú eres, estás, | <i>thou art.</i> |
| El ó ella es etc. | <i>he ó she is.</i> |
| Nosotros (-as) somos, | <i>we are.</i> |
| Vosotros (-as) sois, V. es, | <i>you are.</i> |
| Ellos, ellas son, | <i>they are.</i> |

9. El pronombre personal *I*, yo, se escribe siempre con letra mayúscula.

10. En la oracion interrogativa los nominativos se posponen simplemente al verbo, siendo este verbo sustantivo ó auxiliar.

| | |
|---------------------|---------------------------|
| ¿Tengo? | <i>have I?</i> |
| ¿Tiene V. el libro? | <i>have you the book?</i> |

11. *Thou*, tú, solo se usa en estilo poético ó de púlpito y en las oraciones, hablando con Dios.

| | |
|----------------------------------|--|
| ¿Tiene V. el papel y los libros? | <i>have you the paper and the books?</i> |
| Ella tiene la gramática, | <i>she has the grammar.</i> |

OBSERVACION: En inglés se forman los diminutivos con *small* ó *little* y los aumentativos con *great* ó *large*, grande, ó *big*, gordo, grande.

| | |
|------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| Mi hermano tiene el pan, | <i>my brother has the bread.</i> |
| Los negros tienen los vasos, | <i>the negroes have the glasses.</i> |
| Cansado, | <i>tired.</i> |
| Bueno, | <i>good.</i> |
| Pequeño, | <i>small.</i> |
| ¿Es V. bueno? | <i>Are you good?</i> |
| Mi hermana es buena, | <i>my sister is good.</i> |
| Mi hermanito es aplicado, | <i>my little brother is diligent.</i> |
| Lo (pronombre, ac.), | <i>it.</i> |
| Mi amigo es un hombron, | <i>my friend is a big man.</i> |

12. El acusativo sigue al verbo.

| | |
|-----------------------|----------------------------|
| ¿Tiene V. el caballo? | <i>Have you the horse?</i> |
| Lo tengo, | <i>I have it.</i> |

Tema I.

¿Tengo el libro? V. tiene el libro. ¿Tienen las hermanas las plumas y los libros del padre? Ellas tienen mi libro. ¿Tiene la madre el pan? Ella tiene el pan y el queso (*the cheese*). Los vasos son buenos. Las cajas son pequeñas. — ¿Está V. cansado? Estoy cansado. Nuestras (*our*) esposas

están cansadas. La reyna es buena y el rey es pequeño. — Nosotros somos buenos (el adj. no varía en inglés). — Dios mio (*my God*) Tú eres bueno. — Ellos son ladrones. V. tiene mi pañuelo.

Have we the book? You have it. Have you the books of my brother? We have them (los). Are you tired? I am tired. Is he good? He is good. Is the boy good? The boys are good. Have the negroes my glasses? They have them. Has my brother the paper, the pens and the grammar? He has them.

Leccion II.

Del Artículo indefinido y del Tiempo Presente de los Verbos.

13. *A* ó *an*, artículo indefinido, equivale en español á *uno* ó *una*. *A* se pone delante de los nombres que principian por consonantes, por *h* aspirada, por *u* larga, *w* ó bien por *y*; delante de los demás nombres se usa *an*. Obsérvese que los ingleses se sirven del artículo indefinido delante de los nombres que designan el género de las cosas, el rango, profesion, nacion, secta, pesos y medida; se declina con las mismas preposiciones como el artículo definido.

| | |
|-----------------------|--------------------------------|
| Un lápiz negro, | <i>a black pencil.</i> |
| Un inglés, | <i>an Englishman.</i> |
| Un español, | <i>a Spaniard.</i> |
| Soy coronel, | <i>I am a colonel.</i> |
| Soy católico, | <i>I am a catholic.</i> |
| El es protestante, | <i>he is a protestant.</i> |
| V. es judío, | <i>you are a jew.</i> |
| Mi hermano es sastre, | <i>my brother is a tailor.</i> |

14. Los verbos regulares siguen las reglas siguientes para la formacion del presente de indicativo: a) si el verbo acaba en consonante, *w* doble, ó *y*, se forma la segunda persona del singular añadiendo *est*, y la tercera toma una *s* sola; b) los verbos acabados en *e*, toman *st* en la segunda persona y *s* en la tercera; c) los terminados en *y* siguen la regla de los sustantivos para la formacion del plural; d) los monosílabos aca-

bados en consonante duplican esta consonante en la segunda persona, asimismo los disílabos acentuados en la última sílaba.

15. La primera persona del singular y las tres del plural siempre son iguales al infinitivo; conjugándose únicamente con sus pronombres respectivos; v. g.

Amar *to love.*

Presente de Indicativo.

| | |
|----------------------|--------------------|
| Yo ama | <i>I love</i> |
| Tú amas | <i>thou lovest</i> |
| Aquel ama | <i>he loves</i> |
| (Aquella) ama | <i>she loves</i> |
| El (neutr.) ama | <i>it loves</i> |
| Nosotros(-as) amamos | <i>We love</i> |
| Vosotros(-as) amais | <i>You love</i> |
| Ellos, ellas aman. | <i>They love.</i> |

Conjúguense según las reglas dadas los siguientes verbos:

| | |
|----------|-------------------|
| Pedir | <i>to beg.</i> |
| Llamar | <i>to call.</i> |
| Replicar | <i>to reply.</i> |
| Jugar | <i>to play.</i> |
| Preferir | <i>to prefer.</i> |

16. La negación "no" se traduce por *no* cuando acompaña al sustantivo; y por *not*, cuando acompaña al verbo.

| | |
|-------------------------|--------------------------------|
| ¿Tiene V. mi cuchillo? | <i>Have you my knife?</i> |
| No, señor, no lo tengo, | <i>No, sir, I have it not.</i> |

17. La negación *not* sigue al acusativo, si este es pronombre personal; si sustantivo, le precede.

| | |
|---------------------------|--------------------------------|
| Yo no tengo el vino, | <i>I have not the wine.</i> |
| ¿No tiene V. los clavos? | <i>have you not the nails?</i> |
| ¿Tiene la niña el pájaro? | <i>has the girl the bird?</i> |
| Ella no lo tiene, | <i>she has it not.</i> |

18. Los verbos activos rigen acusativo el cual no está precedido de ninguna preposición en inglés.

| | |
|----------------------|-----------------------------|
| Amo á mi padre, | <i>I love my father.</i> |
| El ama á su hermana, | <i>he loves his sister.</i> |
| Amamos á Dios, | <i>we love God.</i> |

Sustantivos que forman su plural irregularmente.

| | Singular. | Plural. |
|---------|-----------------------|--|
| Niño | <i>child</i> | <i>children.</i> |
| Hermano | <i>brother (reg.)</i> | <i>brethren (en la Escr. sagrada y en el púlpito).</i> |

| | | |
|-------------------|--------------|---------------|
| Dado (para jugar) | <i>die</i> | <i>dice.</i> |
| Pié | <i>foot</i> | <i>feet.</i> |
| Ganso | <i>goose</i> | <i>geese.</i> |
| Piojo | <i>louse</i> | <i>lice.</i> |
| Raton | <i>mouse</i> | <i>mice.</i> |
| Hombre | <i>man</i> | <i>men.</i> |
| Mujer | <i>woman</i> | <i>women.</i> |
| Buey | <i>ox</i> | <i>oxen.</i> |
| Penique (moneda) | <i>penny</i> | <i>pence.</i> |
| Diente | <i>tooth</i> | <i>teeth.</i> |

Los sustantivos siguientes no cambian su terminacion en el plural.

| | Singular. | Plural. |
|-------------------|-------------------|--------------------|
| Gamo, ciervo | <i>deer</i> | <i>deer.</i> |
| Cerdo | <i>swine</i> | <i>swine.</i> |
| Noticia | <i>news</i> | <i>news.</i> |
| Medio | <i>means</i> | <i>means.</i> |
| Gente | <i>people</i> | <i>people.</i> |
| Serie | <i>series</i> | <i>series.</i> |
| Gallina silvestre | <i>grouse</i> | <i>grouse.</i> |
| El portugués | <i>Portuguese</i> | <i>Portuguese.</i> |
| El chino | <i>Chinese</i> | <i>Chinese.</i> |
| Carnero | <i>sheep</i> | <i>sheep.</i> |

19. Todos los compuestos en *man* forman su plural cambiando *man* en *men*, excepto el aleman, *the German*, y el musulman, *the Mussulman*, que siguen la regla general.

Los sustantivos que designan una nacion, pierden el *man* en el plural, si se habla de la generalidad.

| | |
|-------------------------|-----------------------|
| El irlandés | <i>the Irishman.</i> |
| Los irlandeses (nacion) | <i>the Irish.</i> |
| Algunos irlandeses | <i>some Irishmen.</i> |
| El escocés | <i>the Scotchman.</i> |
| Los escoceses | <i>the Scotch.</i> |
| Mi, mis (adj. pos.) | <i>my.</i> |
| Nuestro, a, os, as | <i>our.</i> |
| Escribir | <i>to write.</i> |
| Carta | <i>letter.</i> |

Tema II.

¿Tiene el muchacho mi vino? Tiene mi vino. Nosotros amamos á nuestros hermanos y nuestros hermanos aman á sus (*their*) padres. Los niños son pequeños y los hombres son

grandes (*tall*). Las mujeres llaman á sus hermanas. Los portugueses escriben cartas á los españoles, y los chinos escriben algunas (*some*) á los ingleses. Los escoceses tienen muchos (*many*) carneros. ¿Es V. católico ó protestante? Soy judío. Mi padre es coronel. ¿Es V. inglés ó (*or*) irlandés? Soy español. Nuestro hermano es sastre.

We call our sisters and you call your brothers. You play and I write a letter to my father. Our children love our fathers. Have the men my nails? They have them not. Has our brother a pencil? He has a black pencil, a pen and a book. You have not my book. The Irish are good people. Are the Spaniards good people? They are good. You have a sheep and I have a bird. God loves men more than (mas que) men love God.

Lección III.

Del artículo partitivo; de los adjetivos; del genitivo posesivo.

20. En inglés hay tambien un artículo partitivo que es *some* y *any*. Usase de *some* en la oracion afirmativa, de *any* en la oracion negativa é interrogativa. *Some* y *any* pueden ser adjetivos indefinidos, = alguno-a, os-as.

Yo tengo vino,

¿Tiene V. cerveza?

Mi hermano tiene libros,

¿Tiene su hermana pan?

I have some wine.

have you any beer (ale)?

My brother has some books.

has your sister any bread?

21. En inglés no varía el adjetivo y precede generalmente al nombre:

Lindo, linda, lindos, lindas

Bello, a, os, as,

Feo, fea, feos, feas,

Mi sotana es bonita,

El paisage es bello,

V. tiene un caballo bonito,

El tiene un chaleco feo,

pretty.

Beautiful, fine.

ugly.

my cassock is pretty.

the landscape is beautiful.

you have a fine horse.

he has an ugly waistcoat.

22. En inglés los adjetivos que expresan la materia de que una cosa está compuesta no se diferencian del sustan-

tivo y se colocan delante del nombre que califican. Sin embargo algunos añaden *en* al sustantivo para formar el adjetivo.

| | |
|---------------------------|----------------------------------|
| El oro, <i>the gold</i> , | de oro, <i>gold, golden</i> . |
| Papel, <i>paper</i> , | de papel, <i>paper</i> . |
| Acero, <i>steel</i> , | de acero, <i>steel</i> . |
| Madera, <i>wood</i> , | de madera, <i>wood, wooden</i> . |
| Plata, <i>silver</i> , | de plata, <i>silver</i> . |
| Cuero, <i>leather</i> , | de cuero, <i>leather</i> . |
| Paja, <i>straw</i> , | de paja, <i>straw</i> . |

¿Tiene V. la cinta de oro (aurea)? *Have you the gold ribbon?*
 Tengo los tenedores de plata, *I have the silver forks.*
 Mi hermano tiene una mesa de madera, *my brother has a wooden table.*

La hija tiene la pluma de acero, *the daughter has the steel-pen.*

¿Tiene V. mi sombrero de paja? *have you my straw hat?*

Tengo el zapato de cuero, *I have the leather shoe.*

El tiene dos medias de hilo, *he has two thread stockings.*

23. Los ingleses tienen dos modos de expresar el genitivo: ó con la preposicion *of* ó con una *'s* apostrofada en el singular y con un apóstrofe en el plural. Este último se llama genitivo de posesion, designa al poseedor y siempre precede á la cosa poseida como simple adjetivo.

El palacio del rey (el real pal.), *the King's palace.*

La casa de mi padre (paterna), *My father's house.*

¿Tiene V. el libro del vecino? *have you the neighbour's book?*

Tengo el del vecino, *I have the neighbour's.*

La casa de nuestros amigos. *our friends' house.*

24. Jamás se hace uso de este genitivo con los adjetivos empleados sustantivamente.

La felicidad del malvado es pasajera, *the happiness of the wicked is but transitory.*

Y no puede decirse: *the wicked's happiness etc.*

25. Tampoco puede usarse el apóstrofe con los sustantivos que acaban en *sh* ó *ch*.

El jardin del inglés, *the Englishman's garden.*

Los jardines de los ingleses, *the gardens of the English.*

Los caballos de los franceses, *the horses of the French.*

26. No se pone *'s* apostrofada, sino que se invierten simplemente las palabras, empleándolas siempre como adjetivos:

1) Cuando el segundo nombre señala el empleo expresado por el primero:

| | |
|------------------------|-------------------------|
| Un gorro de dormir, | <i>a nightcap.</i> |
| Un maestro de escuela, | <i>a schoolmaster.</i> |
| El posadero, | <i>the innkeeper.</i> |
| La doncella, | <i>the chambermaid.</i> |

2) Cuando el segundo nombre expresa la especie de la cosa designada por el primer nombre:

| | |
|-----------------------|--------------------|
| Pescado de mar, | <i>sea fish.</i> |
| Pescado de rio, | <i>river fish.</i> |
| Agua de mar, | <i>sea water.</i> |
| Agua salada (de sal), | <i>salt water.</i> |

3) Cuando el genitivo es parte de la cosa expresada:

| | |
|--------------------------|---------------------------|
| La puerta de la casa, | <i>the house door.</i> |
| La puerta del jardin, | <i>the garden gate.</i> |
| La ventana de mi cuarto, | <i>my chamber window.</i> |
| Un banco de iglesia, | <i>a church bench.</i> |

27. En inglés no es menester repetir el mismo adjetivo delante de muchos sustantivos seguidos.

| | |
|---|--------------------------------|
| Un hombre pequeño y una mujer pequeña, | <i>a little man and woman.</i> |
| Un muchacho malo y una muchacha mala, | <i>a naughty boy and girl.</i> |

28. El adjetivo se coloca despues del sustantivo en los casos siguientes:

1) Cuando algo depende del adjetivo:

| | |
|--|---------------------------------------|
| Un hombre generoso para con sus enemigos, | <i>a man generous to his enemies.</i> |
| Un jóven fiel á su religion, | <i>a youth true to his religion.</i> |

2) Cuando el adjetivo es enfático:

| | |
|---------------------|-----------------------------|
| Alejandro el Magno, | <i>Alexander the Great.</i> |
| Luis el Atrevido, | <i>Lewis the Bold.</i> |

3) Cuando varios adjetivos pertenecen á un solo sustantivo:

| | |
|--------------------------------------|---|
| Un hombre justo, sabio y caritativo, | <i>a man just, wise and charitable.</i> |
|--------------------------------------|---|

4) Cuando el adjetivo expresa alguna circunstancia de un sustantivo colocado despues de un verbo activo.

| | |
|--|---|
| La vanidad hace á menudo al que la posee, despreciable, | <i>Vanity oft renders its possessor des- picable.</i> |
|--|---|

Observ. Los adjetivos están unicamente sujetos á un cambio en los grados de comparacion, lo que veremos mas tarde.

Tema III.

¿Tiene V. caballos? Tengo (algunos). Mi hermano tiene bonitos libros y mi hermana tiene hermosos paisajes. El chaleco de mi hermano es feo. La niña tiene un sombrero de paja y yo tengo un reloj (*watch*) de oro. El muchacho tiene un caballo de madera. ¿Tiene V. plumas de acero? Tengo algunas. El comerciante (*merchant*) vende (*sells*) medias de hilo, zapatos de cuero, vasos de plata, cintas de oro, e mesas de madera y sombreros de paja. Los jardines de los ingleses son muy (*very*) bonitos. La casa de mi padre es fea y el palacio del rey es bonito. Los caballos de los españoles son buenos. Nuestro maestro de escuela tiene un gorro de dormir. La casa del posadero es pequeña. Veo de (*I see from*) la ventana de mi cuarto la puerta del jardín. El es un hombre generoso para con sus enemigos y fiel á sus amigos.

Have you any good thread stockings? I have some good thread stockings and some pretty leather shoes. My father has some fine silver forks and my mother has beautiful gold ribbons. I see from my chamber-window our friend's house. The Englishman's garden is very pretty. Are the church-benches beautiful? They are very ugly. Has our schoolmaster a nightcap? He has a nightcap and a penknife (cortaplumas). The happiness of the wicked is transitory and the happiness of the good man is lasting (duradera). Sea-water is salt water.

Leccion IV.

Del uso del artículo.

Hemos visto que en inglés hay tres artículos, el definido, *the*, el indefinido *a* ó *an* (solo empleado en singular), y el partitivo *some* ó *any*. Veamos pues cómo se emplean en inglés esos tres artículos.

29. El artículo es una palabra puesta delante de un nombre para determinar su significado, p. ej. Una mujer; el hombre, — *a woman, the man*.

30. Los nombres propios de personas, ciudades, países, estados, provincias, así como los sustantivos tomados en sentido general ó extendiéndose á toda una especie, especialmente hablando de virtudes, vicios, pasiones, cualidades, títulos, ciencias, artes y metales, y los adjetivos empleados sustantivamente que designan *colores*, no llevan artículo en inglés, excepto que se determinen por otra palabra, sea genitivo ó adjetivo; p. ejemplo:

Jorge, *George*
De Jorge, *of George*
A ó para Jorge, *to George*
Jorge, *George*.

España, *Spain*
De España, *of Spain*
A España, *to Spain*
España, *Spain*.

Guillermo, *William*
De Guillermo, *of William*
A ó p. Guillermo, *to William*
Guillermo, *William*.

Londres, *London*
De Londres, *of London*
A Londres, *to London*
Londres, *London*.

El verde es mas estimado que el negro, *green is more esteemed than black.*

La humildad es una noble virtud, *humility is a noble virtue.*

La falsedad es odiosa, *falsehood is odious.*

La discordia es la ruina de los estados, *discord is the ruin of states.*

El orgullo hace despreciable, *pride renders despicable.*

La vanidad de los franceses es conocida, *the vanity of the French is well known.*

El General Radezky, *General Radezky.*

El valiente General Blucher, *the valiant general Blucher.*

El Ciceron de España, *the Cicero of Spain.*

31. Exceptúanse de esta regla los sustantivos y adjetivos usados sustantivamente que designan toda una nacion, una secta etc. así como los sustantivos que designan toda una especie de animales y algunos nombres propios, que llevan el artículo.

Los alemanes son buenos músicos, *the Germans are good musicians.*

Los metodistas viven en Inglaterra y en los Estados Unidos, *the methodists live in England and the United States.*

El gato coje ratones, *the cat catches mice.*

El perro es fiel, *the dog is faithful.*

Las Indias orientales, *the East-Indies.*

Las Indias occidentales, *the West-Indies.*

Las Filipinas, *the Philippine Islands.*

| | |
|-------------------|---|
| Las Canarias, | <i>the Canary Islands.</i> |
| Los Países-Bajos, | <i>the Netherlands ó Low Countries.</i> |
| El Palatinado, | <i>the Palatinate.</i> |
| La Havana, | <i>the Havanna.</i> |

32. No es necesario repetir el artículo despues de muchos nombres seguidos:

| | |
|--|--|
| El padre, la madre y los hijos están aquí, | <i>the father, mother and children are here.</i> |
| Un niño, una mujer y un hombre han perecido, | <i>a child, woman and man have perished.</i> |
| Vendo la libra en seis chelines, | <i>I sell six shillings a pound.</i> |
| Tres peniques la vara (cf. no. 13), | <i>threepence an ell.</i> |

33. Qué, *what*, exclamativo seguido de sustantivo exige igualmente el artículo indefinido.

| | |
|---|-----------------------------------|
| Qué hombre virtuoso! | <i>What a virtuous man!</i> |
| Qué bribon de criado! | <i>What a rogue of a servant!</i> |
| Qué belleza! | <i>What a beauty!</i> |
| Pertenecer, <i>to belong</i> ; país, <i>country</i> . | |
| Don Juan, <i>Mr. (mister) John</i> ; dar, <i>to give</i> . | |
| Manzana, <i>apple</i> ; pera, <i>pear</i> . | |
| Vicio, <i>vice</i> ; ginete, <i>rider</i> . | |
| Amarillo, <i>yellow</i> ; rojo, <i>red</i> ; blanco, <i>white</i> . | |
| Enoblecer, <i>to ennoble</i> ; entendimiento, <i>mind</i> . | |

Tema IV.

Las Filipinas, las Canarias y la Havana pertenecen á la España. Los Países-Bajos son un bello país. V. vende la libra en tres peniques, y él la vende en dos (*it two*). Qué hombre virtuoso es Dⁿ. Juan! Doy dos peras á (Dⁿ.) Guillermo y seis manzanas á Jorge. La falsedad es un vicio abominable y la humildad es una virtud amable (*amiable*). Los españoles son buenos ginetes y los irlandeses son amigos fieles. El general M'Donald está aquí. Qué bribon de criado V. tiene! Mi criado es un niño. Los alemanes, los ingleses, los franceses, y los escoceses han perecido. Los protestantes viven en Alemania (*Germany*). España es un país católico. El verde es mas estimado que el rojo, y el rojo mas que el amarillo. Esta (*this*) casa es blanca.

Virtue ennobles the mind, but vice debases it. The vanity of a certain class of men is well known and appreciated

accordingly (apreciada segun). *London is a large town (ciudad). Paris is a beautiful town. William lives in Paris and John lives in London. The peace (paz) of society depends on justice. The East-Indies are a large country. My sister lives in the Palatinate and my father lives in the West-Indies. The brave General B. lives in Spain. This woman sells a pear threepence and that man an apple twopence. Industry is the road to wealth (el camino á la riqueza), and virtue to happiness.*

Leccion V.

Del número y género; de la interrogacion.

34. Hay dos números en inglés como en español. Ya hemos visto la formacion del plural, solo nos quedan dos excepciones:

a) Todo lo que la naturaleza ha hecho doble no se emplea sino en plural:

Limosna, *alms*; — ceniza, *ashes*.

Fuelle, *bellows*; — calzones, *breeches*.

Intestinos, *bowels*; — hez, *dregs*.

Entrañas, *entrails*; — pulmon, *lungs*.

Salario, *wages*; — tenazas, *tongs*.

Avena, *oats*; — despabiladeras, *snuffers*.

Tijeras, *scissors*; — tijeras grandes, *shears*.

Matemática, *mathematics*; — metafísica, *metaphysics*.

b) Otros sustantivos solo se emplean en singular:

Cebada, *barley*; trigo, *wheat*.

Conocimiento, *knowledge*; saber, *learning*.

Fuerza, *strength*; pereza, *sloth*.

Riquezas, *wealth*; hambre, *hunger*.

Negocios, *business*; progreso(s), *progress etc.*

35. Algunos sustantivos derivados del latín, griego ó hebreo forman su plural como en dichos idiomas, como: *basis* (base), *bases*; *arcantum* (arcano) *arcana*; *cherub* (querubin), *cherubim* etc.

36. Para conocer el género en inglés obsérvese la regla prescrita por la naturaleza misma; todo animal macho es masculino, todo animal hembra es femenino, las cosas inanimadas y todo animal cuyo sexo no se conoce ó no se determina, son del género neutro. El género afecta en inglés unicamente en su tercera persona del singular á los pronombres personales, adjetivos posesivos y pronombres posesivos.

| | |
|-----------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| Un hombre, <i>a man</i> (masc.). | una mujer, <i>a woman</i> . |
| Una gallina, <i>a hen</i> (fem.). | un campo, <i>a field</i> (neut.). |
| su caballo (de él), | <i>his horse</i> . |
| su caballo (de ella), | <i>her horse</i> . |
| su cebada (de él, neut.), | <i>its barley</i> . |

Observ. Compárense las reglas sobre los pronombres.

37. Los sustantivos personificados ó tomados en sentido figurado, son unos masculinos y otros femeninos, como:

| | |
|--|---|
| El sol, <i>the sun</i> (<i>he</i>); | él tiempo, <i>the time</i> (<i>he</i>). |
| El sueño, <i>the sleep</i> (<i>he</i>); | el amor, <i>the love</i> (<i>he</i>). |
| La muerte, <i>the death</i> (<i>he</i>). | |
| La luna, <i>the moon</i> (<i>she</i>); | la tierra, <i>the earth</i> (<i>she</i>). |
| La religion, <i>the religion</i> (<i>she</i>); | la iglesia, <i>the church</i> (<i>she</i>). |

38. Otros hay cuyo género se distingue por la terminacion, como:

| | |
|----------------------------|------------------------------------|
| Abad, <i>abbot</i> ; | abadesa, <i>abbess</i> . |
| Actor, <i>actor</i> ; | actriz, <i>actress</i> . |
| Conde, <i>count</i> ; | condesa, <i>countess</i> . |
| Judío, <i>jew</i> ; | judía, <i>jewess</i> . |
| Baron, <i>baron</i> ; | baronesa, <i>baroness</i> . |
| Sacerdote, <i>priest</i> ; | sacerdotisa, <i>priestess etc.</i> |

39. Los nombres que son comunes á todos los géneros van acompañados de *man*, hombre, *woman*, mujer, *male*, macho, *female*, hembra, para indicar nombres de personas ó de paises; de *he*, él, *she*, ella, para indicar cuadrúpedos; *cock*, gallo, *hen*, gallina, refiriéndose á las aves.

| | |
|--------------------|--|
| Un criado, | <i>a man-servant, ó servant-man.</i> |
| Una criada, | <i>a maid-servant, ó servant-maid.</i> |
| Un niño, | <i>a male child.</i> |
| Una niña, | <i>a female child.</i> |
| Una cabra, | <i>a she-goat.</i> |
| Un chivato, | <i>a he-goat.</i> |
| Un gorrion, | <i>a cock sparrow.</i> |
| Un gorrion (fem.), | <i>a hen sparrow.</i> |

Exceptúanse:

| | |
|------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| Un burro, una burra, | <i>a jack-ass, a she-ass.</i> |
| Un raposo, una raposa, | <i>a dog fox, a bitch fox.</i> |
| Un conejo, una coneja, | <i>a buck rabbit, a doe rabbit.</i> |
| Hablar, | <i>to speak.</i> |
| Yo hablo inglés, | <i>I speak English.</i> |
| Los ingleses hablan español, | <i>the English speak Spanish.</i> |
| Comer, | <i>to eat.</i> |

40. Hemos visto cómo se forma en inglés el presente de indicativo del verbo adjetivo; esta regla afecta solamente la forma afirmativa; empleado este tiempo negativa ó interrogativamente se forma en inglés con un auxiliar que es generalmente el verbo *to do* (hacer) ó *to be* (ser). — El primero de estos auxiliares exige el verbo en el infinitivo, el segundo en el gerundio ó participio.

| | |
|-------------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| Hacer, <i>to do.</i> | Yo hago, <i>I do.</i> |
| Pasear, <i>to walk.</i> | tu haces, <i>thou dost.</i> |
| Rogar, <i>to pray.</i> | él hace, <i>he docs.</i> |
| Decir, <i>to say, to tell.</i> | hacemos, <i>we do.</i> |
| Comprender, <i>to understand.</i> | haceis, <i>you do.</i> |
| Aprender, <i>to learn.</i> | ellos hacen, <i>they do.</i> |
| ¿Aprende V. inglés? (hace V. ap.) | <i>Do you learn English?</i> |
| ¿Comprende él? (hace él com.) | <i>Does he understand?</i> |
| ¿Aprendo yo? (hago yo ap.) | <i>Do I learn?</i> |
| ¿Aprende mi hermano? (hace mi etc.) | <i>Does my brother learn?</i> |
| ¿Hablamos nosotros? (hacemos etc.) | <i>Do we speak?</i> |
| ó bien ¿estamos nos hablando? | <i>Are we speaking?</i> |
| ¿Escribe V.? (está V. escrib.) | <i>Are you writing?</i> |
| V. no escribe (no hace etc.). | <i>You do not write.</i> |
| Yo no hablo (no hago h.). | <i>I do not speak.</i> |

Tema V.

Mi hermano tiene muchos (*much*) conocimientos. El es hombre de mucho saber. Las riquezas no hacen (*render*) al hombre feliz (*happy*). Veo un gorrion, una cabra y una niña. ¿Ve V. á mi criado? No lo (*him*) veo (acc. al fin). La pereza es el padre (ingl. *madre*) de los vicios. Sin (*without*) religion no hay (*there is no*) progreso, pues (*for*) ella es la base de todo verdadero (*all true*) saber, la regla (*rule*) de nuestra conducta (*conduct*) y el principio (*source*) de toda nuestra feli-

ciudad. El sueño es la imágen (*image*) de la muerte. ¿Habla V. ya (*already*) inglés? Lo hablo. ¿Aprende mi hermano inglés? Lo aprende. ¿Escribe V. una carta? Escribo dos cartas. Escribo una carta á mi madre y otra (*another*) á mi hermana. ¿Me comprende V.? Comprendo á V. No hablo bien (*well*).

Our man-servant has two children. Has that (aquella) woman a she-goat? She has a she-goat, a hen and a cock-sparrow. Do you eat a buck rabbit? I eat one. Does your brother speak English? He speaks English, French, German and Spanish. What (qué?) do you do? I write a letter to my good father. Do you not write to your mother? I write to the bishop. The minister writes to the Queen. Do you understand me, when (cuando) I speak? I do not understand you. Does your little brother learn English? He learns it. I pray to God every day (cada dia = todos los dias).

Leccion VI.

De los grados de Comparacion.

41. En inglés hay tres grados de comparacion como en español, á saber: el comparativo de igualdad, de superioridad y de inferioridad. El comparativo de igualdad se traduce del modo siguiente:

Tan — como, *as — as; so — as.*

Tanto, tanta — como, *as much — as; so much — as.*

Tantos, tantas — como, *as many — as; so many — as.*

42. Usase de *as — as; as much — as; as many — as* en la oracion afirmativa; y de *so — as; so much — as; so many — as* en la oracion negativa.

Tengo tanto como V.

I have as much as you.

¿Tiene V. tanto como mi hermana?

Have you as much as my sister?

No tengo tanto como ella,

I have not so much as she.

¿Es V. tan bueno como él?

Are you as good as he?

No soy tan bueno como él,

I am not so good as he.

Tengo tantas peras como manzanas,

I have as many pears as apples.

No tengo tantos lápices como plumas,

I have not so many pencils as pens.

43. Tan, tanto, tanta, tantos y tantas se traducen por *so*, *so much* y *so many*, cuando no hay comparacion.

| | |
|---------------------------------|--|
| El es tan bueno, | <i>he is so good.</i> |
| V. es tan amable, | <i>you are so kind.</i> |
| Tengo tantos pesares, | <i>I have so much grief.</i> |
| Tenemos tantas cosas que hacer, | <i>We have so many things to do.</i> |
| Hay tanta gente boba! | <i>there are so many foolish people!</i> |

44. El comparativo de superioridad se forma generalmente con la sílaba *er*, la que se añade al adjetivo; y el superlativo con la sílaba *est* y el artículo definido.

| | |
|---------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| Alto, mas alto, el mas alto, | <i>tall, taller, the tallest.</i> |
| Grande, mas grande, el mas gr., | <i>great, greater, the greatest.</i> |
| Rico, mas rico, el mas rico, | <i>rich, richer, the richest.</i> |
| Pobre, mas pobre, el mas pobre, | <i>poor, poorer, the poorest.</i> |

EXCEPCIONES:

1) Los adjetivos acabados en *e* añaden una *r* sola para formar el comparativo, y *st* para formar el superlativo.

| | |
|---------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| Sabio, mas sabio, el mas sabio, | <i>wise, wiser, the wisest.</i> |
| Fino, mas fino, el mas fino, | <i>fine, finer, the finest.</i> |

2) Los adjetivos acabados en *y* cambian la *y* en *i* y añaden *er* y *est* al comparativo y al superlativo cuando la *y* va precedida de una consonante; pero siguen la regla general cuando la *y* va precedida de una vocal.

| | |
|---------------|---|
| Dichoso etc., | <i>happy, happier, the happiest.</i> |
| Amable etc., | <i>lovely, lovelier, the loveliest.</i> |
| Astuto etc., | <i>sly, slier, the slicest.</i> |
| Alegre etc., | <i>gay, gayer, the gayest.</i> |

3) Los participios (empleados adjetivamente) y los adjetivos de mas de dos sílabas, si no terminan en *e* ó *y*, toman *more* (mas) y *the most* (el mas) para formar el comparativo y el superlativo.

| | |
|----------------------------|---|
| Hermoso, mas hermoso etc., | <i>beautiful, more beautiful, the most beautiful.</i> |
| Amante etc., | <i>loving, more loving, the most loving.</i> |
| Sabio (de saber) etc., | <i>learned, more learned, the most learned.</i> |

4) Cuando el adjetivo termina en una sola consonante que va precedida de una *sola* vocal, se duplica esta consonante en el comparativo y en el superlativo.

Gordo, mas gordo, el mas gordo, *big, bigger, the biggest.*
 Limpio etc., *neat, neater, the neatest.*

45. *Que*, despues de comparativo de superioridad ó inferioridad, se traduce por *than*.

Yo soy mas alto que tú, *I am taller than you.*
 La virtud es mas preciosa que las riquezas, *virtue is more precious than riches.*

¿Cuánto mas grande es la tierra que un grano de arena? *how much bigger is the earth than a grain of sand?*

46. Cuando hay comparacion entre dos personas ú objetos se usa del comparativo, cuando hay mas de dos, del superlativo.

¿Quién es mas alto, V. ó yo? *Who is the taller, you or I?*
 ¿Quién es mas alto, V., él ó yo? *Who is the tallest, you, he or I?*
 Cuanto mas — tanto mas, *the more — the more.*
 Cuanto ménos — tanto ménos, *the less — the less.*

47. Enteramente irregulares son los siguientes:

| | |
|---------------------------------------|--|
| Bueno, mejor etc. | <i>good, better, the best.</i> |
| Malo, peor etc. | <i>bad, worse, the worst.</i> |
| Mucho, mas etc. | <i>much</i> } <i>more, the most.</i> |
| Muchos, mas etc. | <i>many</i> } |
| Poco, pequeño etc. | <i>little, less, the least.</i> |
| Pocos, pocas, | <i>few (regular).</i> |
| Léjos, | <i>far, farther (ó further), the farthest.</i> |
| Tengo mas de cincuenta duros, | <i>I have more than fifty dollars.</i> |
| V. es ménos sabio que yo, | <i>You are less learned than I.</i> |
| Yo no soy tan sabio como V., | <i>I am not so (ó less) learned as (than) you.</i> |
| Yo tengo ménos libros que V. | <i>I have fewer books than you.</i> |
| V. tiene ménos queso que vino, | <i>you have less cheese than wine.</i> |
| Mi hermano tiene mas papel que tinta, | <i>my brother has more paper than ink.</i> |
| Muy agradable. | <i>very agreeable.</i> |

Observ. Hay adjetivos que no admiten propiamente comparacion, como:

Verdadero, *true*; perfecto, *perfect*.
 Universal, *universal*; principal, *chief*.
 Extremo, *extreme*, y otros.

Tema VI.

¿Tiene V. tantas cosas buenas como él? No tengo tantas; pero tengo mas que V. ¿Quién es mas sabio, V. ó su (*your*) hermano? Mi hermano es mas sabio que yo; él es el mas sabio de (*in*) la casa. Cuántos pesares (*sing.*) debe V. de (*must you*) tener! Tengo muchos; pero no tantos como los que (*those whom*) llaman grandes hombres. ¿Qué hacen Vds.? Tenemos tantas cosas que hacer. Los hombres ricos son á menudo los mas pobres y los pobres los mas ricos. El pobre (*the poor man*) es generalmente (*generally*) mas feliz que el rico. — Este hombre es muy amable y un amigo perfecto. — Los niños son mas alegres que los hombres. El mas dichoso de los hombres es aquel que (*he that*) tiene buena conciencia (*conscience*), y el mas desgraciado (*unhappy*) aquel que tiene remordimientos. Cuanto mas un niño estudia (*studies*), tanto mas aprende; y cuanto ménos estudia, tanto ménos sabe (*he knows*). Cuanto mas amamos á Dios, tanto mas perfectos somos. — España es un muy hermoso pais.

Have you as much gold as silver? I have more silver than gold. My brother has more gold candlesticks (candeleros) than my mother. Do you know (conocer) this gentleman? he is so kind and so good. Is he better and kinder than his brother? He is much kinder. I am very sorry (siento mucho), you have so much grief. Rothschild is much richer than I; he is the richest man. Is he happier than a poor man? The poorer a man is, the happier he is; for riches do not render man happy, but a good conscience. The more you study, the more you learn; and the more you learn, the more you will know (sabrá V.). It is better to study than to play. It is worse to play than to study. Is our neighbour richer than our tailor? He is richer, for our tailor is very poor. A dwarf is much smaller than a giant; consequently a giant is much taller than a dwarf.

Leccion VII.

De la formacion de algunos adjetivos; — de los números cardinales.

48. Para algunos nombres de nacion hay un sustantivo y un adjetivo; el adjetivo se forma á veces añadiendo la terminacion *ish* á la raiz del nombre.

| Sustantivo. | Adjetivo. | Sustantivo. | Adjetivo. |
|-------------|---------------------|-------------------------|-----------------|
| El danés | danés; | <i>the Dane</i> | <i>Danish.</i> |
| El polaco | polaco; | <i>the Pole</i> | <i>Polish.</i> |
| El español | español; | <i>the Spaniard</i> | <i>Spanish.</i> |
| El turco | turco; | <i>the Turk</i> | <i>Turkish.</i> |
| El inglés | inglés; | <i>the Englishman</i> | <i>English.</i> |
| El francés | francés; | <i>the Frenchman</i> | <i>French.</i> |
| | Una señora inglesa, | <i>an English lady.</i> | |
| | Una danesa, | <i>a Danish woman.</i> | |

49. *One* y *ones* (uno, unos) se emplean á menudo de un modo expletivo y entónces siempre acompañan al adjetivo, refiriéndose á un sustantivo sobre-entendido:

| | |
|----------------------------|-------------------------------|
| ¿Tiene V. un buen caballo? | <i>have you a good horse?</i> |
| Tengo uno bueno, | <i>I have a good one.</i> |
| Tengo cinco buenos, | <i>I have five good ones.</i> |

50. *Right, wrong, hungry, thirsty, afraid, ashamed, sleepy, warm, cold* son adjetivos y exigen el verbo *to be*.

| | |
|---|---------------------------------------|
| Yo tengo razon, | <i>I am right.</i> |
| V. tiene hambre, | <i>you are hungry.</i> |
| Tengo calor, <i>I am warm;</i> | V. tiene frio, <i>you are cold.</i> |
| Mi amigo tiene sed, | <i>my friend is thirsty.</i> |
| El alemán tiene sueño, | <i>the German is sleepy.</i> |
| V. no tiene razon, | <i>you are wrong.</i> |
| El no tiene razon ni deja de tenerla, | <i>he is neither right nor wrong.</i> |
| ¿Quién tiene razon? | <i>Who is right?</i> |
| El húngaro tiene razon, | <i>the Hungarian is right.</i> |
| <i>Wrong</i> es igual á <i>not right</i> , francés: tort. | |

| | |
|----------------------------------|---|
| ¿Tiene el zapatero miedo? | <i>is the shoemaker afraid?</i> |
| No tiene miedo, tiene vergüenza, | <i>he is not afraid, he is ashamed:</i> lit.: el no está miedoso, está vergonzoso. |

Números cardenales (Cardinal numbers).

| | |
|--------------------------------------|--|
| Uno, <i>one</i> . | Veinte y ocho, <i>twenty-eight</i> . |
| Dos, <i>two</i> . | Treinta, <i>thirty</i> . |
| Tres, <i>three</i> . | Treinta y seis, <i>thirty-six</i> . |
| Cuatro, <i>four</i> . | Cuarenta, <i>forty</i> . |
| Cinco, <i>five</i> . | Cincuenta, <i>fifty</i> . |
| Seis, <i>six</i> . | Sesenta, <i>sixty</i> . |
| Siete, <i>seven</i> . | Setenta, <i>seventy</i> . |
| Ocho, <i>eight</i> . | Ochenta, <i>eighty</i> . |
| Nueve, <i>nine</i> . | Noventa, <i>ninety</i> . |
| Diez, <i>ten</i> . | Ciento, <i>a, one hundred</i> . |
| Once, <i>eleven</i> . | Ciento uno, <i>hundred and one</i> . |
| Doce, <i>twelve</i> . | Ciento dos, <i>hundred and two</i> . |
| Trece, <i>thirteen</i> . | Doscientos, <i>two hundred</i> . |
| Catorce, <i>fourteen</i> . | Trescientos, <i>three hundred</i> . |
| Quince, <i>fifteen</i> . | Cuatrocientos, <i>four hundred</i> . |
| Diez y seis, <i>sixteen</i> . | Quinientos, <i>five hundred</i> . |
| Diez y siete, <i>seventeen</i> . | Mil, <i>thousand</i> . |
| Diez y ocho, <i>eighteen</i> . | Mil ciento, <i>one thousand one</i> |
| Diez y nueve, <i>nineteen</i> . | <i>hundred</i> . |
| Veinte, <i>twenty</i> . | Diez mil, <i>ten thousand</i> . |
| Veinte y uno, <i>twenty-one (one</i> | Cien mil, <i>hundred thousand</i> . |
| <i>and twenty)</i> . | Millon, <i>a, one million</i> . |
| Veinte y dos, <i>twenty two</i> . | Cien millones, <i>hundred millions</i> . |

51. *Hundred* y *thousand* llevan el artículo indefinido *a*, cuando sirven para contar objetos determinados; y el numeral *one*, cuando expresan simplemente un número ó parte de un número. Sin embargo *hundred*, hablando de un solo centenar y siguiendo á *thousand*, siempre exige *one*, y si sigue otro número, se pone la conjuncion copulativa *and*.

| | |
|-------------------------------|--|
| Tengo ciento cincuenta varas, | <i>I have a hundred and fifty yards.</i> |
| Mil ciento treinta bueyes, | <i>a thousand one hundred and thirty</i> |
| | <i>oxen.</i> |

| | |
|-------------------------------|---|
| Escorial, 1. de mayo de 1864, | <i>Escorial, the first (1st) of May one</i> |
| | <i>thousand eight hundred</i> |
| | <i>and sixty-four.</i> |

52. Los adjetivos que expresan medidas, siempre siguen al sustantivo; se omite el *de* de los castellanos, la conjuncion copulativa *y* se traduce por *by* y el verbo *tener* por *to be*.

| | |
|---------------------------------------|---|
| Este rio tiene ochenta piés de ancho, | <i>this river is eighty feet broad.</i> |
| Paris tiene treinta millas de circun- | <i>Paris is thirty miles in circum-</i> |
| ferencia, | <i>ference.</i> |

| | |
|---|--|
| El cuarto tiene quince piés de largo y doce de ancho (i. e. el cuarto es 15 piés por doce). | <i>the room is fifteen feet long by twelve wide ó the room is fifteen by twelve.</i> |
| ¿Qué altura tiene esta casa? | <i>How high is this house? (what is the height of this house?)</i> |
| Tiene cuarenta piés de alto, | <i>it is forty feet high.</i> |
| La torre tiene 150 piés de alto, | <i>the tower is 150 feet high.</i> |
| La torre de Estrasburgo tiene cerca de quinientos piés de alto, | <i>the tower of Strasburgh is nearly five hundred feet high.</i> |

Tema VII.

¿Quién tiene razon, el francés ó el inglés? Ni el francés ni el inglés, sino el español tiene razon. ¿Tiene V. hambre? Tengo mucho (*very*) frio. ¿Tiene el turco vergüenza? Los turcos no tienen vergüenza, pero (*but*) los cristianos (*christians*) tienen vergüenza cuando hacen una cosa mala. La señora inglesa tiene miedo, porque (*because*) no habla español. ¿Cuántos (*how many*) caballos tiene V.? Tengo cinco buenos. El americano (*American*) tiene trescientas vacas (*cows*), ciento cincuenta bueyes y tres mil ciento diez carneros. ¿Qué altura tiene la casa de su (*your*) padre de V.? Tiene cincuenta y seis piés de alto, cuatro cientos piés de largo y ochenta piés de ancho. Este pozo (*well*) tiene cuarenta y ocho piés de profundo (*deep*). Nací el año (*I was born the year*) mil ochocientos cuarenta y seis. Los españoles hablan español, los turcos turco, y los daneses danés. Hablo varias lenguas (*different languages*), español, francés, latin, italiano, danés, inglés, portugués y chino.

How old (de qué edad) is your brother? He is fifteen years old. My father is seventy-two years old. Why (porqué) are you ashamed? I am ashamed because I am sleepy. How many oxen has the Frenchman? He has twenty-five oxen, thirty cows and twelve horses. Have the English good horses? They have very good ones. Is the Hungarian or the Italian right? Neither the Hungarian nor the Italian is right, but the Russian (ruso) is right. My room is twenty-five feet long and fourteen feet high. Your room is very small; it is only (solamente) ten feet long and seven wide. I see a Danish lady and an English woman. Do you not see this Spanish lady?

Leccion VIII.

De los números ordinales etc.

53. *Hacer*, hablando del estado del tiempo se traduce por *to be*.

| | |
|-------------------------------|---|
| ¿Qué tiempo hace? | <i>how is the weather? (como está etc.)</i> |
| Hace buen día, | <i>it is a fine day.</i> |
| Hace un tiempo delicioso, | <i>it is charming weather.</i> |
| Hace calor, | <i>it is warm.</i> |
| Hace mucho calor, | <i>it is very warm, it is hot.</i> |
| Hace un calor insoportable, | <i>it is sultry hot, it is suffocating.</i> |
| Hace frío, | <i>it is cold.</i> |
| Hace muchísimo frío, | <i>it is bitterly (amargamente) cold.</i> |
| Hace un frío seco, | <i>it is dry cold weather.</i> |
| Hace viento, el viento sopla, | <i>it is windy, the wind blows.</i> |
| Hay polvo, | <i>it is dusty.</i> |
| Hay barro, | <i>it is dirty.</i> |
| Hace un tiempo húmedo, | <i>it is damp (wet).</i> |
| Hace luna, | <i>it is moonlight.</i> |
| Hace sol, | <i>it is sunshine.</i> |
| Hace oscuro, | <i>it is dark.</i> |
| Ya es de día, | <i>it is daylight (luz de día).</i> |

54. Los números ordinales se forman ordinariamente añadiendo *th* al número cardinal; *five* cambia *ve* en *f*; el primero, segundo y tercero son irregulares, y los acabados en *y* cambian la *y* en *ie* y añaden *th*.

Siendo adjetivos son invariables en inglés.

| | |
|---------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| El primero, <i>the first.</i> | El 15. <i>the fifteenth.</i> |
| El segundo, <i>the second.</i> | El 16. <i>the sixteenth.</i> |
| El tercero, <i>the third.</i> | El 17. <i>the seventeenth.</i> |
| El cuarto, <i>the fourth.</i> | El 18. <i>the eighteenth.</i> |
| El quinto, <i>the fifth.</i> | El 19. <i>the nineteenth.</i> |
| El sexto, <i>the sixth.</i> | El 20. <i>the twentieth.</i> |
| El séptimo, <i>the seventh.</i> | El 21. <i>the twenty-first.</i> |
| El octavo, <i>the eighth.</i> | El 22. <i>the twenty-second etc.</i> |
| El noveno, <i>the ninth.</i> | El 30. <i>the thirtieth.</i> |
| El décimo, <i>the tenth.</i> | El 40. <i>the fortieth.</i> |
| El 11. <i>the eleventh.</i> | El 50. <i>the fiftieth.</i> |
| El 12. <i>the twelfth.</i> | El 60. <i>the sixtieth.</i> |
| El 13. <i>the thirteenth.</i> | El 70. <i>the seventieth.</i> |
| El 14. <i>the fourteenth.</i> | El 80. <i>the eightieth.</i> |

| | |
|---------------------------------------|--|
| El 90. <i>the ninetieth.</i> | El 204. <i>the two hundred and fourth.</i> |
| El 93. <i>the ninety-third.</i> | El 1000. <i>the thousandth.</i> |
| El 100. <i>the hundredth.</i> | El 1000,000. <i>the millionth.</i> |
| El 101. <i>the hundred and first.</i> | |
| El 200. <i>the two hundredth.</i> | |

55. Para determinar los dias del mes se usa del número ordinal, y así mismo despues de los nombres de soberanos y papas.

¿A cómo estamos?

What day of the month is it?

(¿Qué dia del mes es?)

A primero,

it is the first (1st).

Estamos á dos,

it is the second (2nd).

Estamos á tres,

it is the third (3rd).

Estamos á veinticinco,

it is the twenty-fifth (25th).

Escorial el 6 de Junio,

Escorial, the 6th of June.

Enero, *January*; — Febrero, *February*.

Marzo, *March*; — Abril, *April*.

Mayo, *May*; — Junio, *June*.

Julio, *July*; — Agosto, *August*.

Setiembre, *September*; — Octubre, *October*.

Noviembre, *November*; — Diciembre, *December*.

Lunes, *Monday*; Mártes, *Tuesday*; Miércoles, *Wednesday*;

Jués, *Thursday*; Viérnes, *Friday*; Sábado, *Saturday*.

Domingo 23 de Abril — *Sunday, the 23rd of April*.

56. *Foot*, usado en sentido de tropas de infantería, y *horse* en sentido de tropas de caballería, no tienen plural.

Mil ciento cincuenta hombres de infantería. *thousand one hundred and fifty foot.*

Ciento treinta hombres de caballería, *hundred and thirty horse.*

¿Hace V. el primer año de estudios? *are you making the first year of your studies?*

¿Qué volumen (tomo) tiene V.? *Which volume have you?*

Tengo el sexto tomo de su obra, *I have the sixth volume of your work.*

Derecho, ley — *law.*

el primer año de derecho — *the first year of law.*

Tema VIII.

¿Hace frio ó calor? No hace frio, hace mucho calor. Hace buen tiempo, pero hay mucho barro. ¿Hace oscuro? No hace oscuro, pero hace muy húmedo; hace un sol muy agra-

dable. ¿A cómo estamos hoy (*to-day*)? Hoy estamos á 24 de Mayo (de) 1864. ¿A cuánto estuvimos (*was it*) ayer (*yesterday*)? Ayer estuvimos á 16, porque hoy estamos á diez y siete. ¿Qué dia de la semana (*week*) es hoy? Hoy es viérnes, veinte y siete de Marzo. Hoy no hace luna, hace oscuro. ¿Tiene V. el séptimo tomo de la historia (*history*) de Becker? No tengo el séptimo, tengo el octavo y el noveno. ¿Hace V. el segundo año de sus estudios? No, señor (*no, sir*) hago el tercer año de derecho. La deuda nacional (*the national debt*) de Inglaterra es demas de (*than*) 1000,000,000 de libras esterlinas (*pounds*).

It is cold this morning (mañana). *How old is your father?* *He is not yet* (todavía no) *old; he is forty-five years old.* *Are you a student?* *Yes, sir, I am; I am making the fifth year of law.* *How many foot are here?* *There are five thousand foot and seven hundred horse here.* *Is it warm in Spain?* *Spain is a warm country; but Russia is very cold.* *At New-York it is very cold in winter* (invierno) *and sultry hot in summer* (verano). *It is very dusty outside* (fuera). *Who is richer than Rothschild?* *I am much richer than he.*

Leccion IX.

De los Números y de los Pronombres.

Una vez, *once*; dos veces, *twice*.

Tres veces, *three times* (*thrice*); 4 veces, *four times*.

Cinco veces, *five times*; seis veces, *six times*.

Cien veces, *a hundred times etc.*

OBSERV. Seguidos los números se dice *one, two, three etc. times*, — una, dos, tres etc. veces. *Thrice* es poco usado.

Seis por seis = treinta y seis, *six times six are thirty-six.*

4 por 4 = 16,

four times four are sixteen.

La mitad, *the half*; el tercio, *the third* ó *third part*.

El cuarto, *the fourth* ó *fourth part*.

El quinto, *the fifth* ó *fifth part etc.*

Tengo dos tercios de una libra, *I have two-thirds of a pound.*

Una décima parte,

a tenth part.

Tres cuartos de vara,

three-fourths of a yard.

| | |
|------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| Ambos, entrambos, | <i>both.</i> |
| Ambos (los dos) están aquí, | <i>both are here.</i> |
| Doble, <i>double</i> ; | triple, <i>treble</i> ; |
| Décuplo, <i>tenfold</i> ; | céntuplo, <i>hundredfold etc.</i> |
| Una docena, <i>a dozen</i> ; | una veintena, <i>a score.</i> |

OBSERV. Generalmente se usa de *score* de 60, 80; así *threescore*; *fourscore*; *threescore and ten* = 70 (años).

57. El pronombre es una palabra empleada en lugar del nombre, como: Juan es un buen muchacho, él obedece al maestro; *John is a good boy, he obeys the master.*

En inglés hay cuatro especies de pronombres: personales, posesivos, relativos y adjetivos (*personal, possessive, relative and adjective pronouns*).

58. Propiamente no hay mas de dos casos (el genitivo posesivo se emplea adjetivamente), el nominativo y el acusativo ó objetivo. Todas las preposiciones rigen acusativo.

Pronombres personales.

| Singular. | Plural. |
|-----------------------------------|--|
| Nom. Yo, <i>I.</i> | Nom. nosotros, as, <i>we.</i> |
| Acc. A mí, me, <i>me.</i> | Acc. nos, á nosotros, <i>us</i> |
| Gen. de mí, <i>of me.</i> | Gen. de nosotros, <i>of us.</i> |
| Dat. para mí, <i>to me.</i> | Dat. á nosot., nos, <i>to us.</i> |
| Abl. de mí, <i>from me.</i> | Abl. de nosotros, <i>from us.</i> |
| Abl. conmigo, <i>with me etc.</i> | Abl. con nosotros, <i>with us etc.</i> |

| Singular. | Plural. |
|-------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| Nom. tú, <i>thou.</i> | Vosotros, as, V., <i>you — ye.</i> |
| Acc. á tí, te, <i>thee.</i> | á vosotros, os, <i>you.</i> |
| Gen. de tí, <i>of thee.</i> | de vosotros, <i>of you.</i> |
| Dat. para tí, <i>to thee.</i> | para vosotros, os, <i>to you.</i> |
| Abl. de tí, <i>from thee.</i> | de vosotros, <i>from you.</i> |

| Singular, masculino. | Singular, femenino. |
|----------------------------------|----------------------------|
| Nom. El, <i>he.</i> | Ella, <i>she.</i> |
| Acc. A él, le, <i>him.</i> | (á ella, la), <i>her.</i> |
| Gen. de él, <i>of him.</i> | de ella, <i>of her.</i> |
| Dat. para él, le, <i>to him.</i> | á ella, le, <i>to her.</i> |
| Abl. de él, <i>from him.</i> | de ella, <i>from her.</i> |

| | |
|-------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| Singular — neutro. | Plural — para los tres géneros. |
| Nom. Ello, <i>it.</i> | Ellos, ellas, <i>they.</i> |
| Ac. ello, <i>it.</i> | á ellos, as, los, las, <i>them.</i> |
| Gen. de ello, <i>of it.</i> | de ellos, ellas, <i>of them.</i> |
| Dat. á ello, <i>to it.</i> | á ellos, as, les, <i>to them.</i> |
| Abl. de ello, <i>from it.</i> | de ellos, ellas, <i>from them.</i> |

| | |
|------------------------|--------------------------------|
| ¿Habla V. de nosotros? | <i>Do you speak of us?</i> |
| Hablo de él, de ella. | <i>I speak of him, of her.</i> |
| ¿Quién pega al perro? | <i>Who strikes the dog?</i> |
| Yo lo pego, | <i>I strike it.</i> |
| ¿Me conoce V.? | <i>Do you know me?</i> |
| Los conozco, | <i>I know them.</i> |
| No los conozco, | <i>I do not know them.</i> |
| El me escribe, | <i>he writes to me.</i> |

Tema IX.

¿Hablan los hombres de nosotros? No hablan de nosotros; hablan sobre la naturaleza (*of nature*), pues el estudio de la naturaleza es muy instructivo (*instructive*). ¿Va V. (*are you going*) á (la) iglesia? Sí, señor; voy una vez al día (*a day*). ¿Cuánto hacen (*is*) siete por siete? Cuarenta y nueve. ¿Quién pega al perro? Mi tío (*uncle*) lo pega. ¿Porqué lo pega? No lo sé. ¿Hablan Vds. de ellos? No hablamos de ellos, porque (ellos) son perezosos (*idle*) y mala gente. ¿Quién envía (*sends*) mis cartas á España? Nadie (*nobody*) las envía allí (*there*). Doy (*I give*) una manzana á ella y no (*not*) á él. — ¿Tiene nuestra madre una docena de huevos (*eggs*)? Tiene dos docenas. V. tiene setenta años. ¿Conoce V. este hombre? Le conozco, es mi hermano.

Who is speaking of us? Every body (todo el mundo) is speaking of you, for you are worthy of it, being (siendo) so good, honest and learned a man. Is that a Spanish woman? No, she is a Polish lady. Why are you speaking of me? I am speaking of you, because you are a very generous man and esteemed by (de — por) every body. Do you write to your friends? I write to them. Do you often write to your friends? I write once a week; I write every fortnight (cada quincena) to them. Do you write to both of them? I write only to one. How old is your father? He is fourscore and ten.

Leccion X.

Pronombres posesivos.

59. Estos pronombres se llaman tambien absolutos, y algunos gramáticos ingleses los consideran simplemente como genitivo posesivo del pronombre personal. Expresan posesion y nunca acompañan al sustantivo, sino lo representan; y llevan artículo.

| | |
|---------------------------------------|----------------|
| El mio, la mia, los míos etc., | <i>mine.</i> |
| El tuyo, la tuya etc., | <i>thine.</i> |
| El suyo etc. (refiriéndose á uno), | <i>his.</i> |
| El suyo, a etc. (refiriéndose á una), | <i>hers.</i> |
| El suyo (gen. neut.), | <i>its.</i> |
| El nuestro, a, os, as, | <i>ours.</i> |
| El vuestro etc. ó suyo de V., | <i>yours.</i> |
| El suyo etc. (refiriéndose á varios), | <i>theirs.</i> |

| | |
|---------------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| ¿ Tiene V. mi caballo? | <i>have you my horse?</i> |
| No tengo el suyo de V., tengo el mio, | <i>I have not yours, I have mine.</i> |
| ¿ Tiene V. el suyo (de ellos)? | <i>have you theirs?</i> |

| | | | |
|------------------------|---------------|---------|--------|
| Mi, mis, | <i>my.</i> | | |
| Tu, tus, | <i>thy.</i> | | |
| Su, sus, | <i>his</i> | } masc. | |
| Su, sus (de ella), | <i>her</i> | | } fem. |
| Su, sus (de ello), | <i>its</i> | | |
| Nuestro, a, os, as, | <i>our.</i> | | |
| Vuestro etc., su de V. | <i>your.</i> | | |
| Su, sus (de muchos), | <i>their.</i> | | |

60. Estos pronombres preceden al sustantivo. Para darles mas fuerza, pueden ir acompañados del pronombre *own*, propio, y entónces pueden emplearse como pronombres posesivos absolutos ó como pronombres posesivos adjetivos.

Vivo en mi casa, *I live in my (ó my own) house.*

OBSERV. *My house*, mi casa, puede ser casa alquilada; *my own house* denota al mismo tiempo la propiedad.

| | |
|--|-----------------------------------|
| ¿ Qué libro tiene su amigo de V.? | <i>What book has your friend?</i> |
| Tiene el suyo (propio), | <i>he has his ó his own.</i> |
| ¿ Tiene su hijo (de él) nuestro papel? | <i>has his son our paper?</i> |
| Tiene el nuestro y el suyo de ella, | <i>he has ours and hers.</i> |
| Su gato es pequeño, | <i>his cat is small.</i> |

Su (de ella) perrito está enfermo, *her little dog is sick.*
 Su heno es bueno, *its hay is good.*
 Su (de ellos) casa es grande, *their house is large.*

61. Antiguamente se usaba de *mine* y *thine* en lugar de *my* y *thy* delante de un sustantivo ó adjetivo principiando con vocal ó *h* muda, lo que se ve todavía en la Escritura Santa y en poesía.

Borra todas mis iniquidades, *blot out all mine iniquities.*

| | |
|---------------------------|--------------------------|
| Mismo, | <i>self.</i> |
| Yo mismo, a, | <i>myself.</i> |
| Tu mismo, a, | <i>thyself.</i> |
| El mismo, | <i>himself.</i> |
| Ella misma, | <i>herself.</i> |
| Esto mismo, | <i>itself.</i> |
| Nos. mismos, as, | <i>ourselves.</i> |
| Vos. mismos, as, | <i>yourselves.</i> |
| V. mismo, a, | <i>yourself (sing.).</i> |
| Ellos, ellas, mismos, as, | <i>themselves.</i> |
| Uno mismo, se (impers.), | <i>one's self.</i> |

62. Esta forma se usa especialmente con los verbos reflexivos y en este caso se coloca despues del verbo, siendo su complemento.

| | |
|---------------------------|---------------------------------|
| Yo me lisonjeo, | <i>I flatter myself.</i> |
| ¿Se lisonjea V.? | <i>do you flatter yourself?</i> |
| Ellos se lisonjean, | <i>they flatter themselves.</i> |
| Ella se alaba, | <i>she praises herself.</i> |
| Yo mismo lo digo, | <i>I myself say it (ó so).</i> |
| El mismo está aquí, | <i>he himself is here.</i> |
| Nosotros mismos lo vemos, | <i>we ourselves see it.</i> |

63. Cuando el dativo, sea nombre ó pronombre, está delante del acusativo, es necesario suprimir la preposicion *to*; pero cuando el acusativo, sea nombre ó pronombre, está delante, es preciso poner la preposicion *to*, y solo puede suprimirse en este caso, cuando el dativo y acusativo son dos pronombres personales.

¿Quiere V. enviar el libro al hombre? } *Will you send the book to the man?*
 } *ó Will you send the man the book?*

Quiero enviárselo, *I will send it him — ó to him.*

Quiero enviarle el libro, } *I will send the book to him*

} *ó I will send him the book.*

¿Quiere V. darme la carta? } *Will you give me the letter?*

} *ó will you give the letter to me?*

| | |
|---------------------------------|--|
| Quiero darle el sombrero, | { <i>I will give you the hat, ó</i> |
| | { <i>I will give the hat to you.</i> |
| ¿Quiere V. devolverme el libro? | { <i>Will you return the book to me? ó</i> |
| | { <i>will you return me the book?</i> |
| Quiero devolvérselo, | <i>I will return it you ó to you.</i> |

Tema X.

¿Tiene V. mi sombrero ó el suyo? No tengo ni el mio ni el suyo de V., tengo el del buen vecino. ¿Qué libro tiene V.? Tengo el mio. ¿No tiene V. el suyo (de él)? No, señor, no tengo el de él, tengo el de ellos. ¿Quién lo dice? V. mismo lo dice; su hermana de V. lo dice, su cuñado (*his brother-in-law*) lo dice. ¿Qué cosa (*what*) tiene nuestro amigo? Tiene mi sombrero, tu libro y su (de él) carta. ¿Quiere V. enviarle algo (*anything*) á su hermano enfermo? Quiero enviarle algo (*something*). ¿Qué cosa quiere V. enviarle? Quiero enviarle tres libras (esterlinas). ¿Quiere V. escribir una carta á mi madre? Quiero escribir á su madre de V. ¿Quiere V. prestarme (*lend*) su libro? Quiero prestárselo. Dios mio (*my God*) borra todas mis iniquidades! Este hombre se lisonjea saber el idioma inglés. El no es bueno; se siempre alaba (*always*). Vds. se lisonjean saber (*to know*) algo.

Does he praise himself? He does not praise himself, for he is a very good and modest man. Will you write a letter to me? I will send one to you. Are you tired of this man? I am tired of him, because he does nothing (nada), he is very idle. Will you send anything to your little sister and brother? I will send them something, for they are very diligent. Does he speak of himself? He speaks of himself, because he possesses much vanity. Vanity and ambition render man unhappy and are often the source of great crimes. The poet beautifully says:

*Learn to contemn all praise betimes, (oportunamente)
For flattery is the nurse (nodriza) of crimes."*

Leccion XI.

Pronombres relativos (relative pronouns).

| | |
|-----------------------------|-------------------|
| Que, quien, quienes, | <i>who.</i> |
| De quien, quienes, | <i>of whom.</i> |
| Cuyo, cuya, cuyos, cuyas, | <i>whose.</i> |
| A quien, para quien etc., | <i>to whom.</i> |
| Quien, á quien etc., | <i>whom.</i> |
| De quien etc. (separacion), | <i>from whom.</i> |

64. *Who* solo se aplica á personas y á animales personificados. *Whose* es el genitivo posesivo.

| | |
|--|-------------------------------|
| El muchacho que escribe, | <i>the boy who writes.</i> |
| ¿A quién ama V.? | <i>whom do you love?</i> |
| Amo á mis padres, | <i>I love my parents.</i> |
| ¿De quién es aquella casa? (cuya casa etc.)? | <i>Whose house is that?</i> |
| ¿De quién es este cuadro? | <i>Whose is this picture?</i> |

65. *Who* como pronombre interrogativo no necesita de verbo auxiliar para el presente y el imperfecto.

| | |
|----------------------------|--------------------------------|
| ¿Quién escribe esta carta? | <i>who writes this letter?</i> |
| ¿Quién desea escribir? | <i>who wishes to write?</i> |

66. Los pronombres *el que, la que, los que, las que* se traducen en inglés por medio de los pronombres personales ó demostrativos y relativos: *he who, she who, they who; the one who, that who, those who.*

| | |
|--|---|
| El que no trabaja no sirve para nada (es bueno para nada), | <i>he (that, ó the one) who does not work, is good for nothing.</i> |
| Los que trabajan, se llaman (son llamados) aplicados, | <i>those who work are called diligent.</i> |
| ¿Conoce V. á mis hermanos? | <i>Do you know my brothers?</i> |
| ¿Los que están en Madrid? | <i>those who are at Madrid?</i> |

| | |
|--|------------------|
| Que, el cual, la cual, los cuales, las cuales, | <i>which.</i> |
| Del cual, de la cual etc., | <i>of which.</i> |
| Al cual etc., | <i>to which.</i> |
| Cual, al cual etc., | <i>which.</i> |

67. *Which* se emplea hablando de animales ó de cosas inanimadas; para personas se debe emplear cuando se quiere distinguir una de entre muchas.

| | |
|---|---|
| El perro que ladra, | <i>the dog which barks.</i> |
| La casa que V. ve, | <i>the house which you see.</i> |
| ¿Cuál de sus hermanos es el mas aplicado? | <i>which of your brothers is the most studious?</i> |

68. Cuyo, cuya etc. refiriéndose á cosas se traduce por *of which*.

| | |
|--|--|
| El libro cuya encuadernacion es bonita (la encuad. del cual etc.), | <i>the book, the binding of which is pretty.</i> |
|--|--|

69. Cuando el genitivo "de quien" no se puede dar por cuyo, cuya, etc. se traduce en inglés igualmente por *of whom*.

| | |
|---------------------|------------------------------|
| ¿De quién habla V.? | <i>of whom do you speak?</i> |
|---------------------|------------------------------|

OBSERV. El relativo, empleado en genitivo ó dativo é interrogativamente, lleva á menudo en inglés la preposicion al fin.

| | |
|-----------------------|---|
| ¿A quién habla V.? | <i>whom do you speak to? (to whom).</i> |
| ¿A quién lo da V.? | <i>whom do you give it to?</i> |
| ¿De quién lo toma V.? | <i>whom do you take it of?</i> |

70. *That* es pronombre relativo, demostrativo y conjuncion. Como relativo puede emplearse para personas y cosas, en lugar de *who* y de *which*, pero nunca interrogativamente.

| | |
|--------------------------|--|
| El muchacho que lee, | <i>the boy that (who) reads.</i> |
| La mujer que habla, | <i>the woman that (who) speaks.</i> |
| El caballo que relincha, | <i>the horse that (which) neighs.</i> |
| La gallina que cacarea, | <i>the hen that (which) cackles.</i> |
| El campo que V. compra, | <i>the field that (which) you buy.</i> |

71. Estos relativos, estando en el acusativo, así como la conjuncion que (*that*) se omiten á menudo en inglés despues de los verbos que expresan alguna facultad del alma ó despues de una frase con el verbo *to be*.

| | |
|------------------------------------|---|
| Esta es la casa que deseo comprar, | <i>this is the house I wish to buy.</i> |
| Creo que el tiene razon, | <i>I believe he is right.</i> |
| La casa que veo, es nueva, | <i>the house I see is new.</i> |
| El hombre á quien V. habla etc. | <i>the man you speak to.</i> |

OBSERV. Estas locuciones solo deben emplearse en la conversacion.

72. *What*, lo que, es un relativo compuesto, incluyendo el relativo y el antecedente; interrogativamente empleado significa qué? qué cosa? qué especie?

| | |
|-------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| ¿Qué paño tiene V.? (especie) | <i>what cloth have you?</i> |
| ¿Qué (cosa) tiene su hermano? | <i>what has his brother?</i> |
| ¿Qué dice V.? | <i>what do you say?</i> |
| Digo lo que V. dice, | <i>I say what you say.</i> |
| ¿Hace él lo que hacemos? | <i>does he do what we do?</i> |
| Digo, que V. tiene razon, | <i>I say (that) you are right.</i> |

Tema XI.

¿De quién habla su madre de V.? Habla del hombre cuya casa V. ve. ¿A quién ve V.? Veo al hombre de quien V. me habla. ¿De qué hablan Vds.? Hablamos del tiempo. ¿Cuál de sus hermanas escribe una carta? La mas jóven (*young*) escribe dos cartas, una á su madre, y otra (*another*) á su tio. Los que estudian aprenden mucho en poco tiempo (*in a short time*), y los que son perezosos, (no) aprenden nada. ¿Ve V. el libro cuya encuadernacion es tan bonita? Lo veo. ¿Conoce V. todos (*all*) mis hermanos? Conozco los que están en Roma; pero no conozco los que están en España. — ¿Quién desea escribirme? El obispo desea escribirle una cartita. El hombre que habla mucho, yerra (*is much mistaken*) mucho. El campo que V. desea comprar, no es muy bueno. ¿Qué dice V.? Digo que su hermano de V. tiene razon y que su amigo está errado (*is wrong*). Lo que es bueno, es trabajar mucho y cumplir con todos sus deberes (*and to comply with one's duties*). ¿Cree V. que mi hermano tiene razon? No lo sé. ¿Es esta la casa que su padre desea comprar?

What do you say of my parents? We say that they are very good and honest (honrado) people. Do you wish to buy the horse which my brother has? I do not wish to buy that which he has, but I wish to buy that which my cousin (primo) has. Those who do not work are good for nothing. Do you know my cousins? I know those who are at Valladolid; but I do not know those who are at Sevilla. The house which you see, belongs (pertenece) to my brother's wife. Whom does this house belong to, ó whose is this house? I believe it belongs to the Count of Quadt. Whose propriety is that? It is John's propriety (propiedad). Is it not your brother's? No, it is my female cousin's. Whose palace is that? It is the

bishop's. *Have you already (ya) the book, the binding of which is so very pretty? I have it.*

Lección XII.

Pronombres adjetivos.

73. Hay cuatro clases de pronombres adjetivos: posesivos, demostrativos, distributivos é indefinidos.

74. Los pronombres demostrativos son los que marcan el objeto á que se refieren:

Singular.

| | |
|--------------------------------|--|
| Este, esta, <i>this.</i> | Aquel, aquella, ese, esa, <i>that.</i> |
| De este, esta, <i>of this.</i> | de aquel etc. <i>of that.</i> |
| A este, esta, <i>to this.</i> | á ó para aquel etc. <i>to that.</i> |
| A este, esta, <i>this.</i> | á aquel etc. <i>that.</i> |

Plural.

| | |
|----------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| Estos, estas, <i>these.</i> | Aquellos, esas, <i>those.</i> |
| De estos, etc. <i>of these.</i> | de aquellos etc. <i>of those.</i> |
| Para estos etc. <i>to these.</i> | á aquellos etc. <i>to those.</i> |
| A estos etc. <i>these.</i> | á aquellos, esos etc. <i>those.</i> |

75. Se emplea *this* y *these* para expresar personas ó cosas que están cerca de nosotros; *that* y *those* para las que están distantes.

| | |
|----------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| Esto es mejor que aquello, | <i>this is better than that.</i> |
| Conozco á este, pero no á aquel, | <i>I know this, but not that.</i> |
| ¿Desea V. este ó aquel? | <i>do you wish this or that?</i> |
| Deseo aquellos y no estos, | <i>I wish those and not these.</i> |

76. No es necesario repetir en inglés el pronombre demostrativo delante de muchos nombres seguidos, excepto si se diferencian en número.

| | |
|-------------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| Este hombre, esta niña y este niño, | <i>this man, girl and boy.</i> |
| Este hombre y estas mujeres, | <i>this man and these women.</i> |

77. Los pronombres distributivos denotan personas ó cosas que forman un número tomado separada ó aisladamente.

| |
|---|
| Cada, cada uno, <i>each.</i> |
| Cada, todo, <i>every.</i> |
| El uno y el otro, <i>each other.</i> |
| Cualquiera de los dos, el uno ó el otro, <i>either.</i> |
| Ni uno ni otro, ni el uno etc. <i>neither.</i> |

Cada uno de sus hermanos lo desea, *each of his brothers wishes it.*
 Cada una de aquellas pinturas es de valor, *each of those paintings is valuable.*
 Cada uno de ellos se cree sabio, *each of them thinks himself to be learned.*

78. Cada uno se traduce por *every one* ó *every body*; pero cuando va ó puede ir seguido de un genitivo se traduce por *each*.

Cada uno lo cree, *Every body believes it.*

79. Los pronombres indefinidos expresan sus objetos de una manera general. *Other*, otro, otra etc. toma s en el plural, cuando va solo, y queda invariable cuando acompaña el sustantivo; *none*, ninguno, a, os, as, nunca puede acompañar el sustantivo.

| | |
|---|--|
| Tengo otros caballos, | <i>I have other horses.</i> |
| No tengo otros, | <i>I have no others.</i> |
| Uno, a, alguno, a, | <i>one.</i> |
| Muchos, varios, | <i>many, several.</i> |
| Alguno, a, os, as, alguien, | <i>some; somebody, anybody, some one</i> (afirmacion: <i>somebody</i> ; negacion: <i>anybody</i>). |
| Algunos, se (imp.), gente, | <i>{ people,</i> <i>{ they, men.</i> |
| El mismo, a etc. | <i>the same.</i> |
| Todo, os, | <i>all</i> (coleccion). |
| Todo, a (entero), | <i>whole</i> (totalidad de partes). |
| El uno y el otro, etc. | <i>each other, one another.</i> |
| Ambos, entrambos, | <i>both.</i> |
| Tal, fulano, a, | <i>such, such a one.</i> |
| Tal, tales, cuales, | <i>such as.</i> |
| Ninguno, a, os, as, | <i>no</i> (con sustant.). |
| Ninguno, a, os, as, | <i>none</i> (sin sustant.). |
| Quienquiera, que sea, | <i>{ Whoever,</i> <i>{ whosoever.</i> |
| Cualquiera sea, el, la, ó lo que fuere, | <i>{ Whatever</i> <i>{ whatsoever</i> <i>{ which soever</i> (véase lección XXIII. No. 107). |
| Nadie, | <i>nobody, not any body, no one, not one, not any one.</i> |
| Nada, | <i>nothing.</i> |
| Todo, | <i>everything.</i> |

Amo á todos los hombres, *I love all men.*
 Cada uno de nosotros (todos nosotros) estamos aficionados á flores, *each of us is fond of flowers.*
 Regar, *to water*; la calle, *the street*.
 El vino, *the wine*; estar aficionado á, *to be fond of*.
 Dar, *to give*; cereza, *cherry*.

Tema XII.

¿Son buenos los niños de nuestro jardinero? (*gardener*). Ni unos ni otros (sing.) son buenos. Los amigos de mi tío tienen unos (algunos) campos que son grandes y bonitos. Amo á todos los hombres; amo á mis enemigos tambien (*enemies too*). El da un libro á cada uno de Vds. Cada uno riega sus flores. Entrambos, padre y madre, aman á sus hijos, que no son buenos ni uno ni otro. Ambos hermanos son todavía (*yet*) jóvenes; pero sus hermanas son mas jóvenes todavía (*still*). Tales cuales aman á sus amigos y á sus enemigos son muy buena gente. — Las casas de esta ciudad (*town*) son pequeñas, pero las calles son anchas. Estos relojes (*watches*) son mas bonitos que los que sus amigos tienen. Los jardines de Valencia son mas bonitos que los de Madrid. Dáme aquellas cerezas. ¿Cuáles? (*which ones*)? — Esta pluma es de José (*Joseph's*) y aquel cortaplumas de Enrique (*Henry's*). ¿Quién me da algun vino? Su hermano le da alguno. ¿Dónde (*where*) están tus hermanas? Una ú otra está en Madrid.

Are you fond of your children? I love them all; but I love John most. These men are fond of wine. Neither is fond of wine; but both are fond of flowers. The "corregidor" waters every street in Madrid. Both of us love our friends. Either book is good: both are bad: neither is large. These books are much finer than those which our neighbours have. I see such and such a one. Such as love their enemies are good people. Both his friends are in Paris. Every body believes it.

Lección XIII.

Observaciones sobre los pronombres.

1) *Some, somebody, some one, something*, se emplean en la oración afirmativa; *any, any body, any one, any thing* en la oración negativa é interrogativa.

¿Hay alguien aquí?

Is any one here?

Nadie está aquí,

Nobody (not any body) is here.

¿Tiene V. algo?

have you any thing?

No tengo nada,

I have nothing (not any thing).

2) *Nothing* y *nobody* equivalen á *not any thing* y *not any body*; dos negaciones afirman en inglés, por consiguiente, no — nada, no — nadie, se traduce, simplemente por *nothing, nobody*, y el *no* que precede al verbo en castellano no se traduce.

No veo á nadie,

I see nobody (I do not see any body).

3) *Nobody*, no — *one, nothing, no*, y *none*, ninguno y otras expresiones compuestas con *no*, formando una sola palabra, no exigen ningun auxiliar para formar el presente y el imperfecto de indicativo afirmativamente.

No creo nada de eso,

I believe nothing of that, ó bien:

I do not believe any thing of that.

¿No cree V. nada de eso?

do you believe nothing of that?

mejor: *do you not believe any thing of that?*

No tengo libros,

I have no (not any) books.

¿Tiene V. un cuchillo?

have you a knife?

¿No tengo (ninguno),

I have none (ó not any).

No le presto ninguno,

I lend you none; ó I do not lend you any.

No voy á ninguna parte,

I go nowhere, ó I do not go any where.

¿Va V. á alguna parte?

Do you go anywhere?

4) Lo que = la cosa que se traduce por *what*; pero cuando va precedido de todo, se traduce por *all that*.

Eso es todo lo que digo, *that is all that I say.*

Es todo lo que tenemos, *it is all that we have.*

5) En las frases todos nosotros, todos vosotros, todos ellos etc. se ponen en inglés los pronombres personales en genitivo:

Todos nosotros lo vemos, *all of us see it.*
 Todos ellos llegan, *all of them arrive.*

6) Cuando en castellano se emplea el artículo indefinido delante de un sustantivo y despues un pronombre posesivo, en inglés el pronombre posesivo se coloca en genitivo del plural para especificar uno de varios.

Un amigo mio, *a friend of mine* (de los míos).
 Un pariente suyo, *a relation of his.*
 Una tia suya (de ellos), *an aunt of theirs.*
 Vienen dos hermanos míos, *there (all) come two brothers of mine.*

7) En lugar de *this* y *that*, *these* y *those*, se emplean frecuentemente las palabras *the former* y *the latter*, el primero y el último, el uno y el otro, los unos y los otros (prop. el prior y posterior).

¿Desea V. estos ó aquellos? *do you wish the former or the latter?*
 ¿Tiene V. mas cerveza que vino? *have you more beer than wine?*
 Tengo mas del uno que del otro, *I have more of the former than of the latter.*

8) ¿Qué hora es? se traduce por *what o'clock is it?*, literalmente: ¿qué es sobre el reloj?, puesto que *o'clock* es una contraccion en lugar de *on the clock*. Como los ingleses contestan del mismo modo, es el verbo impersonal y está siempre en singular.

Es la una, *it is one o'clock* (es una sobre el reloj).
 Son las dos, *it is two o'clock* (es dos sobre el reloj).
 Son las dos y cuarto, *it is a quarter past two o'clock* (es un cuarto pasado dos sobre el reloj).
 Son las dos y media, *it is half-past two o'clock.*
 Son las tres ménos cuarto, *it is a quarter to three.*
 Son las siete ménos cuarto, *it is a quarter to seven.*

OBSERV. A veces se omite la expresion *o'clock*.

Son las doce del dia, *it is twelve o'clock; it is midday.*
 Son las doce de la noche, *it is midnight.*
 Son las tres de la mañana, *it is three o'clock A. M. (ante meridiem).*
 Son las cinco de la tarde, *it is five o'clock P. M. (post meridiem).*

OBSERV. *A. M.* y *P. M.* solo se emplean por escrito, en cartas ó despachos.

9) Todo, toda etc., puesto en sentido de todas las cosas, se traduce indiferentemente por *all* ó por *everything*: pero si se refiere á una cosa que tiene partes, y que es considerada en su totalidad, se expresa por *whole* precedido del artículo definido.

Todo está perdido ménos el honor. $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{All is lost but our honour,} \\ \textit{every thing is lost but our honour.} \end{array} \right.$
 Todo el mundo, el mundo entero, *the whole world.*
 Toda la suma está perdida, *the whole sum is lost.*

10) Todo el mundo, refiriéndose á personas, se traduce por *every body*.

Todo el mundo lo dice, *every body says so* (asi).

Todo el mundo habla de V., *every body speaks of you.*

Tema XIII.

¿Tiene su primo de V. muchos libros? Mi primo no tiene libros; pero desea comprar algunos. ¿Qué dice V.? No digo nada. ¿Eso es todo lo que V. dice? Es todo. Todos nosotros vemos que V. tiene razon; pero no podemos (*can*) hacer nada en su favor (*in your favour*). ¿Cree V. todo esto? No creo nada de eso, no es verdad (*it is not true*). ¿Va su hermano á alguna parte? No va á ninguna parte, pues estudia todo el dia. ¿Estudia V. toda la semana? Estudio todo el mes. Nadie es juez (*judge*) en su propia causa (*cause*). ¿Me presta V. dinero? No le presto, pues no tengo (ninguno). ¿Es todo lo que V. me presta? No puedo prestar mas. Veo un pariente suyo (de V.). ¿Qué hora es? Son las ocho de la tarde; son las nueve ménos cuarto; son las diez y media; son las once y cuarto de la mañana. Envío el despacho telegráfico (*telegraphic dispatch*) á las ocho y cuarto de la mañana. — Todo el mundo cree que V. es inglés, porque (*for*) V. habla muy bien (*very well*—al fin) (el) inglés.

I will write a letter, for I have nothing to do. Those people who say that they have nothing to do, are generally (generalmente) lazy people. Is any body here? Nobody is here; but somebody will come (vendrá). Do you buy any thing?

*I do not buy anything; for I have no money (not any money).
I go nowhere to-day; for I have to work a great deal (mucho).
At what o' clock do you start (partir)? I start at half-past
four o' clock. We dine at half-past twelve, and we sup (cenar)
at seven o' clock. And at what o' clock (at what hour) do you
breakfast (almorzar)? We breakfast at eight o' clock precisely.*

Leccion XIV.

Observaciones sobre algunos adjetivos y sobre los adverbios calificativos.

Trato ahora de los adverbios calificativos, porque se forman de los adjetivos y las reglas que siguen están íntimamente ligadas con algunas que ya he dado.

1) Hay algunos adjetivos que tienen plural y lo forman irregularmente.

Mucho, mucha,
Muchos, muchas,

*much, a great deal (una gran parte).
many, a good (great) many (= a
great many = muchísimos).*

Poco, poca,
Pocos, pocas,
Unos pocos, unos cuantos,
Cuanto, cuanta?
Cuantos, cuantas?
Demasiado, os,

*little.
few, a few.
a few (some).
how much (como mucho)?
how many?
too much, too many (con adjet., too,
solamente).*

2) Bastante, bastantes, *enough*, generalmente sigue al sustantivo.

¿Cuántos libros tiene V.?
Tengo unos cuantos,
Tengo muchísimos,
¿Tiene V. mucho queso?
Tengo mucho,
Tengo muy poco,
Tengo bastantes uvas,
No tengo muchas,
Hay mucha gente en la iglesia,
¿Tiene V. muchos alumnos en la
escuela?

*How many books have you?
I have a few (but few, solo pocos).
I have a great many.
have you much cheese?
I have a great deal of it.
I have very little.
I have grapes enough.
I have not many.
there are many people at church.
have you many pupils at school?*

OBSERV. *Church*, iglesia, *school*, escuela, *college*, colegio (hablando en sentido general), *heaven*, cielo (lugar de los santos) y *hell*, infierno, no llevan artículo definido.

Envío (mando) á mi hijo al Colegio, *I send my boy to College.*

Voy á la escuela, *I go to school.*

Los santos están en el cielo, *the saints are in heaven.*

Nuestro Señor está en el cielo, *Our Lord is in heaven.*

Hay, *there is* (cuando sigue singular); *there are* (cuando sigue plural).

3) Los adverbios calificativos se forman en inglés añadiendo la terminación *ly* al adjetivo ó participio.

Generoso, *generous*; generosamente, *generously*.

Malo, *bad*; mal(amente), *badly*.

El obra generosamente, *he acts generously.*

4) Todos los adjetivos que acaban en *y*, cambian la *y* en *i* para formar el adverbio.

Dichoso, *happy*, dichosamente, *happily*.

Alegre, *gay*, alegremente, *gayly*.

5) Los adjetivos que terminan en *e*, pierden la *e* para formar el adverbio.

Agradable, *agreeable*; agradablemente, *agreeably*.

Ella habla agradablemente, *she speaks agreeably.*

V. habla mal, *you speak badly.*

6) Bueno, *good*, es irregular: bien, *well*; muy, *very*.

Guillermo habla distintamente, es notablemente aplicado, y lee muy correctamente, *William speaks distinctly, he is remarkably diligent and reads very correctly.*

7) Dos comparativos usados adverbialmente exigen el artículo definido:

Cuanto mas yo veo á V. tanto mas le quiero, *the more I see you, the more I like you.*

Cuanto mejor uno habla, tanto mejor escribe, *the better one speaks, the better he writes.*

Señor, caballero (solo), *Sir* (ó tratamiento de baron).

Señor, caballero (fulano), *Mr. (Mister).*

Un señor, caballero, *gentleman.*

Caballero (órd. milit.), *Knight.*

Caballero (siglos XVII y XVIII), *cavalier, chevalier.*

Señor (señorio, título), *Lord.*

Señor D^o. (en sobre), *Esq., Esqr. = Esquire.*

Dios, nuestro Señor, *God, our Lord.*

| | |
|------------------------------------|--|
| D ⁿ . Pablo, | <i>Mr. (Mister) Paul.</i> |
| Señores! | <i>gentlemen.</i> |
| Señores (comerciantes), | <i>Messrs. (Messieurs), Sirs, gentlemen.</i> |
| Señores (título), | <i>Lords (house of the Lords=senado).</i> |
| D ⁿ . Pedro (muchacho), | <i>Master Peter.</i> |
| Señora! | <i>Madam, ma'am!</i> |
| Señora (fulana), | <i>Mrs. (mistress, pronc. missis).</i> |
| Señora (de rango), | <i>Lady.</i> |
| Señorita, | <i>Miss.</i> |
| Una señorita, | <i>a young lady.</i> |
| Señoras, señoritas, | <i>Ladies.</i> |
| Sir Jorge Brown, | <i>Sir George Brown (baronet).</i> |
| Mi amo (señor), | <i>my master.</i> |
| Mi ama (señora), | <i>mistress (Mrs.).</i> |
| Señoritos Santiago y Carlos, | <i>masters James and Charles.</i> |
| Mi señor padre, | <i>my father.</i> |
| Su señor madre, | <i>your mother.</i> |
| Su señor cuñado, | <i>his brother-in-law.</i> |

Tema XIV.

Mi señor padre tiene muchos carneros; pero pocos caballos. ¿Cuántos caballos tiene su señor hermano? Tiene siete caballos y cuatrocientos carneros. ¿Tiene V. mucha leche (*milk*)? No tengo mucha leche; pero tengo muchísimo vino y muchas uvas. ¿Cuánto dinero tiene su primo de V.? Mi primo tiene veinte y cinco duros, seis reales (*rials*). ¿Tiene bastante para (*in order to*) ir á (*to*) Francia? No tiene demasiado, pero bastante. ¿Hay mas gente en la iglesia que en el teatro (*theatre*)? Desgraciadamente (*unhappily*) hay mas gente (*there are*) en el teatro que en la iglesia. ¿Habla su hermano de V. bien el inglés? Lo habla muy mal; lo habla apenas (*scarcely*); lo habla bien. Cuanto mas uno trabaja, tanto mas aprende. ¿Quién es aquel caballero? Es mi señor hermano. Los señores García hermanos están ahora (*now, actually*) en Francia. La señora Johnson está en casa del señor Bradshaw. El Señor Weedall es presidente (*President*) del Colegio de Santa María (*St. Mary's College*) y el Exmo Señor Arzobispo de Trajanópolis (*his Lordship the Archbishop of . . .*) es presidente del Colegio de S. Lorenzo (*St. Laurentius College*).

Do you go and see Mr. King this morning (mañana)? I will go (fut.) and see him. Has Mr. Trant much business? He has very much business; he works all day long (the whole day). How many hours are there in the day? There are twenty-four hours in the day. Does John work a great deal? He works a great deal; he studies every day during (durante) eight hours. Does he write well? He writes very well and speaks still better. In order to write well, one must (se debe) speak well. Your sister speaks English very badly; but Mr. Harrison speaks French beautifully and reads it very correctly. Do you go to College? Yes, I go every morning to college and to church. Are your boys at St. Mary's College? No, sir, they are at St. Joseph's college, where (donde) they learn a great deal better than at St. Mary's. I will send mine there (allí).

Leccion XV.

Observaciones varias.

1) Ciertos sustantivos pueden suprimirse en inglés, empleados con genitivo posesivo; v. g.

La casa de mi padre, *my father's (house).*
La iglesia de San Pablo, *St. Paul's.*

2) La preposicion en se traduce por *at* (reposo) y *á* por *to* (movimiento).

| | |
|-------------------------------------|---|
| Voy á casa (tienda) del zapatero, | <i>I go to the shoemaker's (house or shop).</i> |
| Vengo de casa del sastre, | <i>I come from the tailor's.</i> |
| ¿Va V. á la iglesia de la Trinidad? | <i>are you going to Trinity Church?</i> |
| Vengo del cuarto del presidente, | <i>I come from the president's (room).</i> |
| Voy á casa de V., | <i>I go to your house ó to you.</i> |
| Voy á casa de él, de ella. | <i>I go to his house, ó to him; to her.</i> |
| Venga V. á nuestra casa, | <i>come to us; ó to our house.</i> |
| Vamos á casa, | <i>let us go home.</i> |
| El está en casa (la suya), | <i>he is at home.</i> |
| Está en casa del Sr. B., | <i>he is at Mr. B.'s.</i> |
| Nadie está en casa, | <i>nobody is at home.</i> |
| Todo el mundo va á casa, | <i>every body goes home.</i> |

3) Hablando de las partes del cuerpo, se emplea en el singular el artículo indefinido, y en el plural ningún artículo.

| | |
|---------------------------------------|--|
| Tengo dolor de cabeza, | <i>I have a head-ache.</i> |
| Le duelen los dientes, tiene etc. | <i>he has a tooth-ache.</i> |
| Tiene la frente ancha, | <i>he has a large forehead.</i> |
| Tengo el ojo malo, | <i>I have a sore eye.</i> |
| Tengo los ojos malos, | <i>I have sore eyes.</i> |
| V. tiene la rodilla mala, | <i>you have a sore knee.</i> |
| El tiene el dedo del pié malo, | <i>he has a sore toe.</i> |
| ¿Quién tiene la mano mala? | <i>who has a sore hand?</i> |
| Nadie la tiene mala, | <i>nobody has a sore one.</i> |
| El tiene la boca chica, | <i>he has a small mouth.</i> |
| ¿No tiene los ojos negros (azules)? | <i>has he not black (blue) eyes.</i> |
| Tengo el pelo negro, | <i>I have black hair.</i> |
| Al cirujano le duele la cabeza mucho, | <i>the surgeon has a dreadful head-ache.</i> |
| El ingeniero tiene los piés malos, | <i>the engineer has sore feet.</i> |

4) Los sustantivos que expresan el uso á que se destinan, cambian de sentido segun preceden ó siguen:

| | |
|-----------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| Un vaso de vino, | <i>a glass of wine.</i> |
| Un vaso para vino, | <i>a wine-glass.</i> |
| Una taza de té, | <i>a cup of tea.</i> |
| Una taza para té, | <i>a tea-cup.</i> |
| Una chocolatera, | <i>a chocolate-pot.</i> |
| Teiera, | <i>teapot.</i> |
| ¿Desea V. un vaso de vino? | <i>do you wish a glass of wine?</i> |
| Dáme este vaso (para vino), | <i>give me that wine-glass.</i> |
| Tomo una taza de café, | <i>I take a cup of coffee.</i> |

5) En lugar del genitivo de los castellanos, se emplea en inglés dativo, hablando de los parientes.

| | |
|--|--|
| El es hermano del rey, | <i>he is a brother to the king.</i> |
| Soy pariente de él (suyo), | <i>I am related to him, a relation to him, ó of his.</i> |
| Ella es hermana del Sr. Bethel, | <i>she is a sister to Mr. Bethel.</i> |
| Por la mañana, <i>in the morning</i> ; por la tarde, <i>in the evening</i> . | |

Tema XV.

¿Adónde (*where—to*) va V.? Voy á casa del inglés para escribir mi tema (*theme, task*). ¿De dónde (*whence*) viene V.? Vengo del jardín de mi padre y voy á casa del baron. ¿Qué hace V. en casa del baron? No hago nada. ¿Quién está en-

fermo (*sick*)? Mi hermano está enfermo, tiene la rodilla mala y un fuertísimo dolor de cabeza. ¿Qué pelo tiene el Sr. Granda? Tiene el pelo negro, los ojos negros, la boca chica, la frente ancha, los piés pequeños, las manos grandes (*large*) y los dientes blancos (*white*). Déme V. un vaso de vino. No tengo vino; pero si V. quiere (*wish*) una taza de café, le daré una (*I will give you one*). No quiero café; pero déme V. una taza de té. ¿Quién es este caballero? Es el hermano de la Señora Gilpin, quien es amiga mia. ¿Conoce V. al Señor Gilpin? No le conozco; pero sé (*I know*) que es uno de los mejores amigos de V.

Are you well to-day? I am a little better. They say, your cousin has black hair, blue eyes and a large mouth. People say a good deal; but not every thing is true what they say; you must not believe all they say. When does your little sister go to school? She goes there every evening. Does she not go in the morning? No, sir, she only goes in the evening. Will you take a cup of coffee? No, sir, I don't like (no me gusta) coffee; but I will take a cup of chocolate. Is your boy at school? He is at church, in the garden, in the kitchen (cocina), in the orchard (huerto). Has your girl bad toes? She has bad toes, so that (de manera que) she cannot walk (andar). I am sorry for it.

Lección XVI.

De los verbos.

80. El verbo es una palabra que expresa la afirmacion. Hay dos clases de verbos: el verbo sustantivo, que afirma simplemente, y el verbo adjetivo que expresa, á mas de la afirmacion, alguna accion. — Los verbos adjetivos se subdividen en verbos activos, pasivos, neutros, reflexivos é impersonales. — Verbos auxiliares son los que sirven para conjugar los demas. En la conjugacion del verbo hay que considerar el número, las personas, modos y tiempos como en castellano. Hay dos números; y en cada uno tres personas; cinco modos y

seis tiempos, de los cuales dos simples y cuatro compuestos.
— De su uso y empleo hablaremos despues.

Verbo auxiliar *to have* (irreg.), haber ó tener.

Modo indicativo.

Tiempo presente.

| | |
|-----------------------------|----------------------------|
| Yo hé ó tengo, | <i>I have.</i> |
| Tú has ó tienes, | <i>thou hast.</i> |
| El, ella, ello ha, ó tiene, | <i>he, she, it has.</i> |
| Nosotros hemos ó tenemos, | <i>we have.</i> |
| Vosotros habeis ó teneis, | <i>you have (ye have).</i> |
| V. ha ó tiene, | <i>you have.</i> |
| Ellos, as, han ó tienen, | <i>they have.</i> |

Pretérito imperfecto y perfecto.

| | |
|------------------------------|-------------------------|
| Yo habia, tenia; hube, tuve, | <i>I had.</i> |
| Tú habias etc. | <i>thou hadst.</i> |
| | <i>he, she, it had.</i> |
| | <i>we had.</i> |
| | <i>you had.</i> |
| | <i>they had.</i> |

Perfecto pasado.

| | |
|------------|-----------------------------|
| He tenido, | <i>I have had.</i> |
| | <i>thou hast had.</i> |
| | <i>he, she, it has had.</i> |
| | <i>we have had.</i> |
| | <i>you have had.</i> |
| | <i>they have had.</i> |

Pluscuamperfecto y Pretérito anterior.

| | |
|------------------------|-----------------------------|
| Yo habia, hube tenido, | <i>I had had.</i> |
| | <i>thou hadst had.</i> |
| | <i>he, she, it had had.</i> |
| | <i>we had had.</i> |
| | <i>you had had.</i> |
| | <i>they had had.</i> |

Futuro.

| | |
|--------------------|---------------------------------------|
| Yo habré ó tendré, | <i>I shall have, ó will have.</i> |
| | <i>thou shalt ó wilt have.</i> |
| | <i>he, she, it shall ó will have.</i> |
| | <i>we shall ó will have.</i> |
| | <i>you shall ó will have.</i> |
| | <i>they shall ó will have.</i> |

Futuro anterior.

| | |
|------------------|---|
| Yo habré tenido, | <i>I shall ó will have had.</i> |
| | <i>thou shalt ó wilt have had.</i> |
| | <i>he, she, it shall ó will have had.</i> |
| | <i>we shall ó will have had.</i> |
| | <i>you shall ó will have had.</i> |
| | <i>they shall ó will have had.</i> |

Imperativo.

| | |
|-----------------------|-----------------------|
| Ten tú, | <i>have.</i> |
| Tenga él, | <i>let him have.</i> |
| Tenga ella, | <i>let her have.</i> |
| Tenga él (neut.), | <i>let it have.</i> |
| Tengamos, | <i>let us have.</i> |
| Tened, | <i>have.</i> |
| Tengan ellos ó ellas, | <i>let them have.</i> |

Modo subjuntivo.*Presente.*

| | | |
|----------------------|----------------------|-------------------------------|
| Que yo haya ó tenga, | <i>if I have,</i> | <i>that I may have.</i> |
| | <i>if thou have,</i> | <i>that thou mayest have.</i> |
| | <i>if he have,</i> | <i>that he may have.</i> |
| | <i>if we have,</i> | <i>that we may have.</i> |
| | <i>if you have,</i> | <i>that you may have.</i> |
| | <i>if they have,</i> | <i>that they may have.</i> |

Imperfecto.

| | | |
|-------------------------|---------------------|----------------------------|
| Si yo hubiera, hubiere, | <i>if I had,</i> | <i>I might have.</i> |
| | <i>if thou had,</i> | <i>thou mightest have.</i> |
| | <i>if he had,</i> | <i>he might have.</i> |
| | <i>if we had,</i> | <i>we might have.</i> |
| | <i>if you had,</i> | <i>you might have.</i> |
| | <i>if they had,</i> | <i>they might have.</i> |

Condicional.

| | |
|---------------------|--|
| Yo habria, tendria, | <i>I could ó should ó would have.</i> |
| | <i>thou couldst, wouldst, shouldst have.</i> |
| | <i>he could, should, would have.</i> |
| | <i>we could, should, would have.</i> |
| | <i>you could, should, would have.</i> |
| | <i>they could, should, would have.</i> |

Futuro imperfecto.

| | |
|--------------------------|-------------------------------|
| Si yo hubiere ó tuviere, | <i>if I should have.</i> |
| | <i>if thou shouldst have.</i> |
| | <i>if he should have.</i> |

Si hubiéremos ó tuviéremos, *if we should have.*
if you should have.
if they should have.

Condicional pasado.

Yo habria habido ó tenido, *I should ó would have had.*
thou shouldst ó wouldst have had.
he should ó would have had.
we should ó would have had.
you should ó would have had.
they should ó would have had.

Modo infinitivo.

Haber ó tener, *to have.*
 Haber habido ó tenido, *to have had.*

Participio.

Habiendo ó teniendo, *having.*
 Habiendo habido ó tenido, *having had.*
 Habido ó tenido, *had.*

Verbo auxiliar *to be*, ser ó estar.

Modo indicativo.

Presente.

Yo soy ó estoy etc. *I am.*
thou art.
he, she, it is.
we are.
you are.
they are.

Preterito imperfecto y perfecto.

Yo era ó estaba; fui ó estuve etc. *I was.*
thou wast.
he, she, it was.
we were.
you were.
they were.

Perfecto pasado.

Yo he sido ó estado, *I have been.*
thou hast been.
he, she, it has been.
we have been.
you have been.
they have been.

Pluscuamperfecto y Perfecto anterior.

| | |
|-------------------------------|------------------------------|
| Yo habia, hube sido ó estado, | <i>I had been.</i> |
| | <i>thou hadst been.</i> |
| | <i>he, she, it had been.</i> |
| | <i>we had been.</i> |
| | <i>you had been.</i> |
| | <i>they had been.</i> |

Futuro.

| | |
|-------------------|-------------------------------------|
| Yo seré ó estaré, | <i>I shall ó will be.</i> |
| | <i>thou shalt ó wilt be.</i> |
| | <i>he, she, it shall ó will be.</i> |
| | <i>we shall ó will be.</i> |
| | <i>you shall ó will be.</i> |
| | <i>they shall ó will be.</i> |

Futuro anterior.

| | |
|-------------------------|--|
| Yo habré sido ó estado, | <i>I shall ó will have been.</i> |
| | <i>thou shalt ó wilt have been.</i> |
| | <i>he, she, it shall ó will have been.</i> |
| | <i>we shall ó will have been.</i> |
| | <i>you shall ó will have been.</i> |
| | <i>they shall ó will have been.</i> |

Imperativo.

| | |
|-----------------------------|---------------------|
| Sé ó está tú, | <i>be.</i> |
| Sea ó esté el, | <i>let him be.</i> |
| Sea ó esté ella, | <i>let her be.</i> |
| Seamos, estamos nosotros, | <i>let us be.</i> |
| Sed ó estad, | <i>be.</i> |
| Sean ó estén ellos ó ellas, | <i>let them be.</i> |

Modo subjuntivo.*Presente.*

| | | |
|--------------------|--------------------|-----------------------------|
| Que yo sea ó esté, | <i>if I be,</i> | <i>that I may be.</i> |
| | <i>if thou be,</i> | <i>that thou mayest be.</i> |
| | <i>if he be,</i> | <i>that he may be.</i> |
| | <i>if we be,</i> | <i>that we may be.</i> |
| | <i>if you be,</i> | <i>that you may be.</i> |
| | <i>if they be,</i> | <i>that they may be.</i> |

Pretérito imperfecto.

| | | |
|-------------------------------------|----------------------|--------------------------|
| Qué yo fuera, fuese, estuviese etc. | <i>if I were,</i> | <i>I might be.</i> |
| | <i>if thou wert,</i> | <i>thou mightest be.</i> |
| | <i>if he were,</i> | <i>he might be.</i> |
| | <i>if we were,</i> | <i>we might be.</i> |
| | <i>if you were,</i> | <i>you might be.</i> |
| | <i>if they were,</i> | <i>they might be.</i> |

Condicional simple.

Yo seria, estaria,

*I could, should, would be.
 thou couldst, shouldst, wouldst be.
 he could, should, would be.
 we could, should, would be.
 you could, should, would be.
 they could, should, would be.*

Condicional pasado.

Yo habria sido, estado,

*I should ó would have been.
 thou shouldst ó wouldst have been.
 he should ó would have been.
 we should ó would have been.
 you should ó would have been.
 they should ó would have been.*

Futuro imperfecto.

Si yo fuere ó estuviere,

*if I should be.
 if thou should be.
 if he should be.
 if we should be.
 if you should be.
 if they should be.*

Infinitivo (Gerundio) y Participio.

| | |
|-------------------------|----------------------|
| Ser ó estar, | <i>to be.</i> |
| Haber sido ó estado, | <i>to have been.</i> |
| Siendo ó estando, | <i>being.</i> |
| Habiendo sido ó estado, | <i>having been.</i> |
| Sido ó estado, | <i>been.</i> |

Observaciones generales.

1) La formacion de la negacion é interrogacion no presenta dificultades en cuanto á los verbos auxiliares. En los tiempos simples se coloca el sujeto después del verbo para formar la interrogacion, y la negacion al fin; en los tiempos compuestos se coloca primero el auxiliar, después el sujeto y la negacion, si es negativo, y al fin el participio y en el futuro anterior el segundo auxiliar y el participio; pero cuando hay contraccion con el auxiliar y la negacion, se coloca esta ántes del sujeto.

| | |
|---------------------|---|
| ¿Tengo yo? | <i>have I?</i> |
| ¿No tienes tú? | <i>hast thou not, ó hasn't thou?</i> |
| ¿Tiene él? | <i>has he?</i> |
| ¿No tiene V.? | <i>have you not? ó haven't you?</i> |
| ¿Tenia yo? | <i>had I?</i> |
| ¿No tenia yo? | <i>had I not ó hadn't I?</i> |
| ¿Ha tenido V.? | <i>have you had?</i> |
| ¿No ha tenido V.? | <i>have you not had ó haven't you had?</i> |
| ¿Tendremos? | <i>shall we have?</i> |
| ¿No tendremos? | <i>shall we not have ó shan't we have</i> |
| ¿Habréis tenido? | <i>will you have had?</i> |
| ¿No habréis tenido? | <i>will you not have had ó won't you have had</i> |
| Que no tengamos, | <i>let us not have.</i> |
| Que no tengais, | <i>have not ó haven't.</i> |
| No he estado, | <i>I have not been ó I haven't been.</i> |
| ¿No he estado? | <i>have I not been ó haven't I been?</i> |
| ¿Estaremos? | <i>shall we be?</i> |
| No estaremos, | <i>we shall not be, ó we shan't be.</i> |
| ¿No estaremos? | <i>shall we not be ó shan't we be?</i> |
| Que el no sea, | <i>let him not be.</i> |

2) Las expresiones hay, habia, hubo, ha habido etc. se traducen en inglés por el verbo *to be* y el adverbio *there*, allí, concuerda en número con el nombre que sigue.

| | |
|--|--|
| Hay estudiantes que no quieren trabajar, | <i>there are students who do not wish to work.</i> |
| ¿Hubo mucha gente? | <i>were there many people?</i> |
| Habia un hombre etc. | <i>there was a man etc.</i> |
| Ha habido mucha alegría, | <i>there has been much joy.</i> |
| ¿Habrá un día de vacacion? | <i>will there be a holiday?</i> |
| No habrá vacaciones, | <i>there shall be no holidays.</i> |

3) Hay seguido de un nombre de distancia se traduce por *it is, is it?*, habia, *it was, was it?* etc. Del mismo modo se traduce la expresion *hace*, con referencia á tiempo ó duracion ó una accion completamente concluida; el "que" de los castellanos se traduce por *since* (desde que) suprimiéndose la negacion, si está en el segundo miembro de la oracion; y el verbo se pone en el imperfecto.

| | |
|--|--|
| Distante, lejos, <i>far</i> (comp. <i>farther</i> ó <i>further</i> , sup. <i>farthest</i> ó <i>furthest</i>). | |
| ¿Qué distancia hay de aqui á Madrid? | <i>how far (cómo lejos) is it from here to Madrid?</i> |
| Hay ocho leguas (32 millas), | <i>it is eight leagues (thirty-two miles).</i> |
| Hay mucha distancia, | <i>it is very far.</i> |

Hay mas distancia de Paris á Berlin *it is farther from Paris to Berlin*
 que de Bruselas á Colonia, *than from Brussels to Cologne.*
 ¿Cuánto tiempo hace que está V. *How long have you been at the*
 en el Escorial? *Escorial?*
 Hace mucho tiempo que no le veo, *it is long since I saw him.*

OBSERV. Despues de haber dado la conjugacion de los verbos regulares, se explicarán estos modos de hablar tan diferentes del castellano.

4) *There is, there was etc. to be*, se traduce en castellano por debe, debia etc. de haber.

Debe de haber una ceremonia religiosa, *there is to be a religious ceremony.*

Debía de haber un sermon, pero el cura está enfermo, *there was to be a sermon, but the parish priest (católico) (parson — protest.) is sick.*

5) Los ingleses emplean tambien el verbo *to be* seguido de un infinitivo para marcar la intencion, la obligacion, la conveniencia, la necesidad en que está uno de hacer algo.

Debo escribir una carta, *I am to write a letter.*
 Debía partir con él, *I was to start with him.*
 Tengo que almorzar con él, *I am to breakfast with him.*

6) Es, era, fué etc. se traduce en inglés *it is, it was*, hablando de cosas inanimadas; de una persona se dice *it is, it was*, cuando se la considera como causa de alguna cosa, ó cuando *it is* etc. está seguido de un pronombre personal; en los demás casos se emplea *he* ó *she*.

Es mi casa, *it is my house.*
 Era mi tintero, *it was my inkstand.*
 El pintor es quien lo dice, *it is the painter who says so.*
 Es pintor, *he is a painter.*

Soy yo (es yo), *it is I.*
 Eres tú, *it is thou.*
 Es él, ella, *it is he, it is she.*
 Somos nosotros, as, *it is we.*
 Sois vosotros, es V., *it is you.*
 Son ellos, ellas, *it is they.*

7) Hé aquí, héle aquí; héla allí etc. se traduce *here is, here are; there is, there are.*

Hé aquí un hermano suyo, *here is one of your brothers (a brother of yours).*

Hélos aquí,
Hélas allí,

here they are.
there they are.

Tema XVI.

¿Ha estado V. en (*in*) Paris? He estado en Paris y en Londres; pero no he estado en Bruselas ni en Colonia. ¿Había mucha gente (plural) en la iglesia? No había mucha gente en la iglesia; pero había mucha en el mercado (*at the market*). ¿Tendrá V. dinero? (con *shall*). No sé, si tendré dinero; pero tendré buenos vestidos. ¿De quién es esta casa? Era la mia; ahora es (*now it belongs to*) del Señor John Price. Iré á Madrid tan luego (*as soon as*) que habrá dia de vacacion. ¿Cuánto hay (qué distancia) de Madrid á Alicante? No sé cuántas millas hay. De Madrid á Barcelona hay unas (*about* = mas ó ménos) trescientas veinte millas. Es lejos (hay mucha distancia). ¿Quién lo dice? Soy yo; es V.; son ellos; es el zapatero quien lo dice. ¿Tiene V. que escribir una carta? No, señor, tengo que almorzar con mi amigo. ¿No habrá él tenido tiempo (*time*)? Creo que no habrá tenido tiempo. Si yo fuera rico, le daría (*I should give*) dinero á V.; pero no siendo rico, no le doy nada. V. es bastante rico. He sido rico; pero ahora soy pobre. Si fuera mas alto, alcanzaria (*I should reach*) este cuchillo. Si la palabra "si" (*the word "if"*) no fuese, tendria muchas cosas que ahora no tengo.

If your brothers were rich, they should go to Germany. How far is it from Paris to London? It is about three hundred miles. Is it far from here to Hamburgh? It is very far. Is it farther from Berlin to Dresden, than from Leipzig to Berlin? It is further from Berlin to Dresden. Where have you been to-day? We have been in the country (al campo). Was it fine weather yesterday (ayer)? It was very fine weather. What have you had in your hands? I have had an inkstand, a pen and a pencil. How long have you been in Madrid? I have been there for about (mas ó ménos) fourteen years. Let us be good and wise, and people will love us. Here was the oak (encina) and there was your brother. To vice are often sacrificed wealth, happiness, and everything virtuous and valuable.

Leccion XVII.

Los verbos regulares.

Antes de hablar de la formacion y empleo de los tiempos, modos etc. del verbo regular, pondremos primero un paradigma cuyo conocimiento facilitará las explicaciones que tendremos que dar.

Conjugacion del verbo regular *to call* — llamar.

Modo indicativo.

Tiempo presente.

Yo llamo, estoy llamando etc., *I call, I do call, I am calling.*
thou callest, thou dost call, thou art calling.
he calls, he does call, he is calling.
we call, we do call, we are calling.
you call, you do call, you are calling.
they call, they do call, they are calling.

Pretérito imperfecto y perfecto.

Yo llamaba, llamé, *I called, I did call, I was calling.*
thou calledst, thou didst call, thou wast calling.
he called, he did call, he was calling.
we called, we did call, we were calling.
you called, you did call, you were calling.
they called, they did call, they were calling.

Pretérito pasado.

He llamado, *I have called.*
thou hast called.
he has called.
we have called.
you have called.
they have called.

Pluscuamperfecto y Perfecto anterior.

Habia, hube llamado, *I had called.*
thou hadst called.
he had called.
we had called.
you had called.
they had called.

Futuro.

| | |
|-------------|--------------------------------|
| Yo llamaré, | <i>I shall ó will call.</i> |
| | <i>thou shalt ó wilt call.</i> |
| | <i>he shall ó will call.</i> |
| | <i>we shall ó will call.</i> |
| | <i>you shall ó will call.</i> |
| | <i>they shall ó will call.</i> |

Futuro anterior.

| | |
|----------------|---------------------------------------|
| Habré llamado, | <i>I shall ó will have called.</i> |
| | <i>thou shalt ó wilt have called.</i> |
| | <i>he shall ó will have called.</i> |
| | <i>we shall ó will have called.</i> |
| | <i>you shall ó will have called.</i> |
| | <i>they shall ó will have called.</i> |

Imperativo.

| | |
|-----------------------|-----------------------|
| Llama tú, | <i>call.</i> |
| Llame él, | <i>let him call.</i> |
| Llame ella, | <i>let her call.</i> |
| Llamemos, | <i>let us call.</i> |
| Llamad, | <i>call.</i> |
| Llamen ellos ó ellas, | <i>let them call.</i> |

Modo subjuntivo.*Presente.*

| | |
|---------------|---|
| Que yo llame, | <i>if I call; that I may call.</i> |
| | <i>if thou call; that thou mayest call.</i> |
| | <i>if he call; that he may call.</i> |
| | <i>if we call; that we may call.</i> |
| | <i>if you call; that you may call.</i> |
| | <i>if they call; that they may call.</i> |

Pretérito imperfecto.

| | |
|----------------------|--|
| Yo llamara, llamase, | <i>if I called; I might call.</i> |
| | <i>if thou called; thou mightest call.</i> |
| | <i>if he called; he might call;</i> |
| | <i>if we called; we might call.</i> |
| | <i>if you called; you might call.</i> |
| | <i>if they called; they might call.</i> |

Condicional simple.

| | |
|-----------|--------------------------------------|
| Llamaria, | <i>I should ó would call.</i> |
| | <i>thou shouldst ó wouldst call.</i> |
| | <i>he should ó would call.</i> |
| | <i>we should ó would call.</i> |
| | <i>you should ó would call.</i> |
| | <i>they should ó would call.</i> |

Condicional pasado.

Yo habria llamado,

*I should ó would have called.
 thou shouldst ó wouldst have called.
 he should ó would have called.
 we should ó would have called.
 you should ó would have called.
 they should ó would have called.*

Futuro imperfecto.

Si yo llamare,

*if I should call.
 if thou shouldst call.
 if he should call.
 if we should call.
 if you should call.
 if they should call.*

Infinitivo y Participio.

Llamar,

to call.

Haber llamado,

to have called.

Llamando,

calling.

Habiendo llamado,

having called.

Llamado,

*called.***Forma interrogativa.***Presente.*

¿Llamo?

*Do I call; am I calling?
 dost thou call; art thou calling?
 does he call; is he calling?
 do we call; are we calling?
 do you call; are you calling?
 do they call; are they calling?*

Imperfecto y Perfecto.

¿Llamaba, llamé yo?

*did I call; was I calling?
 didst thou call; wast thou calling?
 did he call; was he calling?
 did we call; were we calling?
 did you call; were you calling?
 did they call; were they calling?*

Pasado.

¿He llamado?

*have I called? etc.**Pluscuamperfecto y Perfecto anterior.*

¿Había, hube llamado?

had I called? etc.

Futuro.

¿Llamaré? *shall I call?*
wilt thou call? etc.

Forma negativa é interrogativa.*Presente.*

¿No llamo yo? *Do I not call, ó don't I call?*
dost thou not call, ó dostn't thou call?
does he not call, ó doesn't he call?
do we not call, ó don't we call?
do you not call, ó don't you call?
do they not call, ó don't they call?

Imperfecto etc.

¿No llamaba ó llamé yo? *did I not call, ó didn't I call?*
didst thou not call, ó didstn't thou call?
did he not call, ó didn't he call?
did we not call, ó didn't we call?
did you not call, ó didn't you call?
did they not call, ó didn't they call?

Pasado.

¿No he llamado yo? *have I not called, ó haven't I called? etc.*

Formacion de los tiempos de los verbos regulares.

81. En inglés no hay mas de una conjugacion; el infinitivo puede terminar en consonante ó en vocal.

82. Fórmase el presente de indicativo añadiendo *est* á la segunda persona del singular, y *s* á la tercera, si el verbo acaba en consonante ó *w*. La primera del singular y las tres del plural son iguales al infinitivo en todos los verbos, excepto en el verbo *to be*.

Suplicar, *to beseech*; yo suplico, *I beseech*.
tú suplicas, *thou beseechest*.
él suplica, *he beseeches*.

Saber, conocer, *to know*; yo conozco etc., *I know*; *thou knowest*;
he knows.

Enviar, *to send*; envío etc., *I send*; *thou sendest*; *he sends*.

83. Los verbos acabados en *ch*, *th*, *sh*, *ss*, *x*, y *o* toman en la tercera persona del singular del presente de indicativo la sílaba *es*.

Desear, *tō wish*; — *I wish*; *thou wishest*; *he wishes*.

84. Los verbos terminados en *y* cambian *y* en *ie* en la segunda y tercera persona del singular, cuando la *y* va precedida de consonante; y siguen la regla no. 82, si va precedida de vocal.

Satisfacer, *to satisfy*; — *I satisfy*; *thou satisfiest*; *he satisfies*.
Rogar, *to pray*; — *I pray*; *thou prayest*; *he prays*.

85. Los verbos terminados en *e*, añaden *st* para formar la segunda persona, y *s* para la tercera.

Tomar, *to take*; — *I take*; *thou takest*; *he takes*.

86. Los verbos monosílabos acabados en una sola consonante, y los verbos disílabos acabados en una sola consonante y acentuados en la última sílaba, duplican esta última consonante en la segunda persona del singular del presente de indicativo, en el imperfecto y en el participio presente y pasado.

Pedir, *to beg*; — yo pido, *I beg*; *thou beggest*, *he begs*.
Pidiendo, *begging*; — yo pedia, *I begged*; pedido, *begged*.
Permitir, *to permit*; — *I permit*; *thou permittest*; *he permits*.
Permitiendo, *permitting*; permitia, *I permitted*; permitido, *permitted*.

87. En la Escritura Sagrada, en el púlpito y en el estilo grave se emplea á menudo la terminacion *eth* en la tercera persona del presente de indicativo.

El habla, *he speaketh*.
El castiga, *he chastiseth*.
El tiene, *he hath*.
El suplica al Señor, *he beseecheth the Lord*.
Reir (se), *to laugh*; de alguien, *at somebody*.
Preguntar, *to ask*; — sudar, *to perspire*.
Sonreirse, *to smile*; — rehusar, *to refuse*.
Sorprender, *to surprise*; — traducir, *to translate*.
Resolver, *to resolve*; — conversar, *to talk*.
Pasear, *to walk*; — quedar, *to remain*.

Tema XVII.

¿Quién ha llamado á mi madre? Soy yo; pues deseo hablarle. ¿Ha llamado V. á su hermano, para que aprenda su leccion (*lesson*) de inglés? No le he llamado; pero le llamaré ahora mismo (*immediately*). Este señor me preguntó, si estudiaba inglés. ¿Y qué le decia (*tell*) V.? (Me) sonreia diciéndole que ya lo sabia (*that I knew it already*). (Me) he re-

suelto trabajar mucho. ¿Ha traducido V. las obras (*works*) de Shakespeare? Son demasiado difíciles (*difficult*); no puedo traducirlas. (Nos) paseámos durante dos horas y hablámos de muchas cosas. Hizo calor ayer (*yesterday*), sudé muchísimo. Me ha sorprendido V. con su visita (*visit*). ¿Le ha pedido á V. algun favor (*any favour of you*)? No me ha pedido ningun favor; pero siempre que (*whenever*) pueda, le haré favores. ¿Le habrán permitido venir á nuestra casa? No sé, si se lo habrán permitido. Rogaré á Dios por su salud (*for your health*). ¿Le ha satisfecho la visita del Escorial (*Escorial*)? Me ha completamente (*entirely*) satisfecho; es cosa grande (*grand*). ¿Le enviarán algunas manzanas? Me mandarán manzanas, peras y cerezas (*cherries*). ¿Sabe V. si (*whether*) viene (vendrá) su hermano ó no? Vendrá de todos modos (*by all means*). ¿Son difíciles los verbos (*verbs*) ingleses? Son muy fáciles (*easy*). Castigaré á los alumnos (*pupils*) que no quieren estudiar; pues él que no estudia, no aprende nada; y el que no aprende nada, quedará ignorante (*ignorant*).

Have you learned the English language? I have studied it a little; but I don't speak it yet. What did your master say? He smiled at me, saying, that he was very much satisfied with (con) me. Will you tell the pupils to translate this theme into Spanish? I will tell them to do so. Do you laugh at me? I do not laugh at you; for I have never (nunca) laughed at anybody. Why has he laughed at you? He has laughed at us, because we have been very awkward. Has he refused to go to the tailor's? Why did he refuse it? He didn't refuse it. Did you walk this morning? We did not (walk). How long did you remain at church? I remained there about (mas ó menos) an hour's time. Did you know your lesson? I knew (sabia) it; because I always learn it very well. Do you learn it by heart (de memoria)? No, sir; I cannot study by heart.

Leccion XVIII.

Del gerundio, imperfecto y participio pasado.

88. El participio presente ó gerundio se forma en inglés añadiendo la terminacion *ing* al infinitivo.

Dibujar, *to draw*; — dibujando, *drawing*.

Jugar, *to play*; — jugando, *playing*.

89. Si el verbo termina en *e*, se omite esta y se añade *ing*; solo se retiene, si el verbo se debe distinguir de otro semejante en la pronunciacion.

Amar, *to love*; — amando, *loving*.

Chamuscar, *to singe*; — chamuscando, *singeing*, para distinguirlo del verbo *to sing*, cantar; *singing*, cantando.

Teñir, *to dye*; tiñendo, *dyeing* (cf. no. 90).

90. Si el infinitivo termina en *ie*, se cambia *ie* en *y*, y se añade *ing*.

Morir, *to die*; muriendo, *dying* (cf. *dyeing*).

Mentir, *to lie*; mintiendo, *lying*.

Atar, *to tie*; atando, *tying*.

OBSERV. Para los monoslabos etc. véase el no. 86.

Omitir, *to omit*; omitiendo, *omitting*.

91. Para la formacion del imperfecto y del participio pasado se aplican las reglas que hemos dado sobre la formacion del presente de indicativo, es decir, se añade al infinitivo *ed*; una *d* sola, se cambia la *y* y se duplica la última consonante en los mismos casos. En el imperfecto se añade *st* á la segunda persona del singular, las demás personas son iguales á la primera del singular, y el participio pasado es invariable.

Rogar, rogaba (rogué), rogado, *to pray, I prayed, prayed*.

Tú amabas, *thou lovedst*.

El ha jugado, *he has played*.

Ella me pedía un favor, *she begged a favour of me*.

Traté de aprenderlo, *I tried to learn it*.

Tratar, trataba, tratado, *to try, I tried, tried*.

92. El futuro simple y el futuro anterior se forman con los auxiliares *shall* (deber) y *will* (querer) y el infinitivo del verbo que se conjuga; de manera que en el futuro simple no hay ni un solo verbo irregular.

Sobre Will y Shall.

1) *Will* en la primera persona del singular y plural expresa resolucion y promesa.

| | |
|--|--|
| Nosotros iremos, | <i>we will go.</i> |
| Haré de tí una gran nacion, | <i>I make of thee a great nation.</i> |
| No te dejaré partir sin que me bendigas, | <i>I will not let thee go, except thou bless me.</i> |

2) *Will* en la segunda y tercera persona del singular y del plural predice alguna cosa futura.

| | |
|---------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| El premiará á los justos, | <i>he will reward the righteous.</i> |
| V. será feliz allí, | <i>you will be happy there.</i> |
| V. tendrá todo lo que necesita, | <i>you will have all you want.</i> |

3) *Shall* en la primera persona predice.

| | |
|-------------|------------------------------|
| Iré mañana, | <i>I shall go to-morrow.</i> |
|-------------|------------------------------|

4) *Shall* en la segunda y tercera persona expresa promesa, mandato, amenaza.

| | |
|----------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| Ellos serán recompensados, | <i>they shall be rewarded.</i> |
| No robarás, | <i>thou shalt not steal.</i> |
| Honrarás á tus padres, | <i>thou shalt honour thy parents.</i> |

OBSERV. Esto se entiende de las oraciones afirmativas; si la oracion es interrogativa, deben justamente invertirse estas reglas.

| | |
|-------------------------------------|---|
| ¿Iré mañana? | <i>shall I go to-morrow?</i> |
| ¿Le serviré un poco de esta fuente? | <i>shall I help you to a little of this dish?</i> |
| ¿Volverá Santiago mañana? | <i>Will James return to-morrow?</i> |
| ¿Será V. feliz allí? | <i>shall you be happy there?</i> |

93. *Should* y *would* están sujetos á las mismas reglas.

| | |
|-------------------------------------|---|
| Si yo corriese, me cansaria pronto, | <i>if I were to run, I should soon be fatigued.</i> |
|-------------------------------------|---|

| | |
|-----------------------|-----------------------------------|
| Lo haria, si pudiese, | <i>I would do it, if I could.</i> |
|-----------------------|-----------------------------------|

Should se emplea á menudo para expresar el deber, la obligacion, en lugar de *ought* (deber).

| | |
|--|--|
| Deberíamos acordarnos de los pobres, | <i>we should remember the poor.</i> |
| Debemos obedecer antes á Dios que á los hombres, | <i>we ought to obey God rather than men.</i> |

| | |
|--------------------|------------------------------|
| Salir, | <i>to go out.</i> |
| La semana próxima, | <i>next week (sin art.).</i> |

| | |
|---------------------|------------------------|
| El año próximo, | <i>next year.</i> |
| El mes próximo, | <i>next month.</i> |
| La semana pasada, | <i>last week.</i> |
| La quincena pasada, | <i>last fortnight.</i> |

94. *De los semi-auxiliares* (Verbos defectivos).

1) Los mas usados son los siguientes: *shall* (deber), *will* (querer), *can* (poder), *may* (poder, con permiso), *must* (deber, ser menester, necesario), *to let* (permitir), *ought* (deber como obligacion moral), *to do* (hacer). Ninguno de estos verbos exige la partícula *to* para el infinitivo que de él depende, á excepcion del verbo *ought*, que siempre está seguido de *to*.

2) Estos verbos solo se emplean en el presente y en el imperfecto. *To let* y *to do* son tambien verbos adjetivos y como tales se emplean en todos los tiempos.

| | |
|--------------------------------|------------------------|
| Yo puedo, <i>I can</i> , | — <i>I may</i> , |
| Tú puedes, <i>thou canst</i> , | — <i>thou mayest</i> , |
| El puede, <i>he can</i> , | — <i>he may</i> , |
| Podemos, <i>we can</i> , | — <i>we may</i> , |
| Podeis, <i>you can</i> , | — <i>you may</i> , |
| Pueden, <i>they can</i> , | — <i>they may</i> . |

| | |
|--------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| Quiero, <i>I will</i> , | Debo, <i>I shall</i> , |
| Quieres, <i>thou wilt etc.</i> | debes, <i>thou shalt etc.</i> |

Debo, me es preciso, *I must*; este verbo no sufre ningun cambio ni en el presente ni en el imperfecto.

| | |
|---------------------------------|--|
| Yo debia, deberia, debiese etc. | <i>I could</i> ; — <i>I might</i> , |
| | <i>thou couldst</i> ; — <i>thou mightest</i> , |
| | <i>he could</i> ; — <i>he might etc.</i> |

| | |
|---|--|
| Es menester que vaya, | <i>he must go.</i> |
| Los niños deben ser obedientes, | <i>children ought to be obedient.</i> |
| ¿Podria V. decirme por dónde se va al correo? | <i>could you tell me which way leads to the post-office?</i> |
| Podria si quisiera, | <i>I might if I liked; I could if I would.</i> |
| ¿Le gustaria á V. viajar? | <i>should you like to travel?</i> |
| Me gustaria mucho, | <i>I should like it very much.</i> |
| V. puede ir, | <i>you may go (permiso).</i> |
| V. puede ir (<i>andar</i>), | <i>you can go, walk (físicamente).</i> |
| ¿Puedo hacer esto? | <i>may I do this? (pidiendo permiso).</i> |
| V. tiene permiso para hacerlo si puede, | <i>you may do it, if you can.</i> |

Tema XVIII.

Mis amigos están cantando en la iglesia. ¿Está V. dibujando? No, señor, estoy escribiendo una carta. ¿Está su hermano escribiendo el tema (de) inglés? Lo está escribiendo. ¿Ha tratado V. de traducir el paraíso perdido (*paradise lost*) de Milton? Habría tratado de traducirlo, si no hubiese sabido (*if I had not known*), que ya lo están traduciendo. ¿Trabajará V. mañana? No trabajaré, porque es día de fiesta (*feast-day*). ¿No trabaja V. los (*on*) días festivos? ¿Qué nos dice (*tells us*) el cuarto mandamiento (*commandment*)? Dice así (*thus*): honrarás á tu padre y á tu madre, afin de que (*so that*) vivas (*mayest live*) largo tiempo. Los buenos serán recompensados y los malos serán castigados. La virtud es tan bella que se (*one*) la debe amar necesariamente (*necessarily*). El mes próximo empezaré á estudiar (*el*) inglés. Mis alumnos son aplicados, porque estudiarán durante las vacaciones. ¿Le servirá un poco de sopa (*soup*)? No, señor, pero sírvame V. un poco de carne (*meat*).

What says our Lord in his promises to the Jews? He says: I will make of thee a great nation. Though (aunque) Philip the Second was a great king, yet (sin embargo) there are many who will not believe it. What shall I tell you? Tell us anything. Next time we shall begin with more difficult tasks. There will be a small treaty (tratado) on friendship (amistad); you will translate it, and I shall ask you about what you have translated. That will be a very good exercise in English in order (para) to learn (how) to speak.

Leccion XIX.

Del Subjuntivo.

1) Se usa del subjuntivo en una frase que depende de otro verbo y cuando es cuestion de un deseo, de una suposicion ó hecho supuesto.

La sentencia fué que pagase una multa de tres libras (esterl.). *the sentence was that he pay a penalty of three pounds.*

No lo haga mas para que no le suceda algo peor. *Do it no more, lest something worse happen to you.*

2) La conjuncion *if*, *si*, puede omitirse con inversion del nominativo.

Si fuese rico, lo haria, *{ if I were rich, I should do it,*
{ were I rich, I should do it.
{ I should do it, were I rich,
{ I should do it, if I were rich.

Si hubiese recibido el dinero, le pagaria á V., *if I had received my money, I would pay you; ó bien: had I received my money, I would pay you etc.*

Si fuese bueno, seria feliz, *were he good, he would be happy.*

3) *May* y *might* y tambien *should* con el infinitivo es lo que llaman los ingleses el modo potencial; expresa posibilidad, libertad, poder, voluntad ú obligacion.

Es posible que el viento sople, *the wind may blow.*
 V. puede ir allá (está libre), *you may go there.*
 Deberia V. obedecer á sus padres, *you should obey your parents.*

4) Las siguientes conjunciones van seguidas del subjuntivo cuando hay *duda*, y del indicativo cuando no la hay.

Si, *if* (cond.).
 Si, *whether* (alternativa).
 Aunque, *though.*
 A menos que, *unless, except.*
 Para que no, *lest.*
 De miedo que, *for fear that.*

Si está allí, dígaselo, *if he be there, tell it him* (duda),
if he is there, tell it him (certidumbre).

A menos que trabaje etc., *unless he work.*

5) A veces se emplea el subjuntivo del imperfecto en lugar del condicional.

Seria injusto castigarle, *{ it were unjust to punish him,*
{ it would be unjust to punish him.
 Seria locura el hacerlo, *{ it were folly to do it*
{ it would be folly to do it, ó bien
{ it were foolish to do it,
{ it would be foolish to do it.

6) Despues de las conjunciones ó locuciones conjuntivas cuando, *when*; como, *as*; en cuanto que, tan luego que, *as*

soon as; despues que, *after*, se emplea en inglés el modo indicativo.

¿Qué hará V. cuando haya comido? *What will you do, when you have (ó shall have) dined?*

En cuando reciba mi dinero, le pagaré á V., *as soon as I (shall) receive my money, I will pay you.*

Cuando haya hablado á mi padre, sabré lo que tengo que hacer, *When (as soon as) I (shall) have spoken to my father, I shall know what I have to do.*

Eleccion, *choice*; — hecho, *made*.

Sin, *without*; — pensamiento, *reflexion, thought*.

Sin embargo, *yet*; — depender de, *to depend upon*.

Principalmente, *chiefly*; — cariño, *liking*.

Amistad, *friendship*; — juventud, *youth*.

Finas (simpáticas) maneras, *engaging manners*; — lugar, *place*.

Suplicar, *to entreat*; — buscar, *to look for*.

Entendimiento sano, *sound understanding*; — fuerte, perseverante, *steady*.

Apego, *attachment*; — principio, *principle*.

Base, fundamento, *ground*; — varonil, *manly*.

Facultades, dones, *endowments*; — lustre, *lustre*.

Tema XIX.

Si su hermano fuese rico, me prestaria (*lend*) dinero. Si V. fuese pobre, no gastaria (*spend*) tanto dinero inútilmente. ¿Iria V. á Alemania (*Germany*) si yo le acompañase (*accompany*)? Iria, si V. fuese (*went*) conmigo. Si hubiese recibido el dinero, habria pagado (*paid*) al sastre. ¿Serian Vds. felices, si fuesen buenos? Ciertamente (*certainly*) seríamos felices. A menos que V. trabaje, no aprenderá nada. Si V. estuviese en casa, le visitaria. Cuando hayamos hablado al maestro, sabremos qué tema tendremos que hacer (*to make*). Tan luego que haya comido (*to dine*), iré al Escorial. Cuando haya visto (*seen*) el Escorial, le diré lo que pienso de él (*I think of it*).

The choice of friends.

Nothing is of more importance for the young than to be careful in the choice of their friends and companions. This choice is too frequently made without thought, or is determined by some casual connection; and yet, very often, the whole fate

of our future life depends upon it. The circumstances which chiefly attract the liking and the friendship of youth, are vivacity, good humour, engaging manners, and a cheerful and easy temper (un genio alegre y fácil); qualities, I confess, amiable in themselves, and useful and valuable in their place. But I entreat you to remember, that these are not all the qualities requisite to form an intimate companion or friend. Something more is still (todavía) to be looked for; a sound understanding, a steady mind, a firm attachment to principle, to virtue and honour. It is only on the substantial ground of these manly endowments, that the other qualities can receive their proper lustre.

| Question: | Answer: |
|---|---|
| What is of great importance to the young? | To be careful in the choice of their friends. |
| How is this choice often made? | Without thought, or by some casual connection. |
| What depends upon this choice? | The fate of our future life. |
| What circumstances attract chiefly the friendship of youth? | Vivacity, good humour, engaging manners etc. |
| What else (qué mas?) is to be looked for? | A sound understanding; a firm attachment to principle, virtue and honour etc. |

Leccion XX.

De los verbos irregulares.

Antes de hablar del empleo de los tiempos y de otras particularidades del verbo así como de algunos modismos, daremos la lista de los verbos irregulares.

95. Los verbos ingleses pueden ser irregulares en el pretérito imperfecto y en el participio pasado, y por consiguiente en los tiempos que con él se forman. En el presente son irregulares los auxiliares y los semi-auxiliares que ya hemos visto.

Los verbos que admiten la forma regular van marcados con una *R*, y las terminaciones anticuadas con una *A*.

| <i>Infinitivo.</i> | <i>Imperfecto.</i> | <i>Part. pasado.</i> |
|--|--|-------------------------------------|
| <i>To abide</i> , habitar, | <i>abode</i> , | <i>abode</i> . |
| <i>to arise</i> , levantarse, | <i>arose</i> , | <i>arisen</i> . |
| <i>to awake</i> , despertarse, | <i>awoke</i> , R., | <i>awaked</i> . |
| <i>to be</i> (<i>I am</i>), ser ó estar, | <i>was</i> , | <i>been</i> . |
| <i>to bear</i> , sostener, sufrir, | <i>bore</i> , <i>bare</i> , | <i>borne</i> . |
| <i>to bear</i> , producir, dar á luz, | <i>bore</i> , <i>bare</i> , | <i>born</i> . |
| <i>to beat</i> , batir, apalear, | <i>beat</i> , <i>bate</i> , | <i>beaten</i> , <i>beat</i> . |
| <i>to become</i> , llegar á ser, | <i>became</i> , | <i>become</i> . |
| <i>to befall</i> , acaecer, | <i>befell</i> , <i>befel</i> , | <i>befallen</i> . |
| <i>to beget</i> , engendrar, | <i>begot</i> , <i>begat</i> , | <i>begotten</i> . |
| <i>to begin</i> , empezar, | <i>began</i> , <i>begun</i> , | <i>begun</i> . |
| <i>to begird</i> , ceñir, | <i>begirt</i> , R., | <i>begirt</i> , R. |
| <i>to behold</i> , mirar, ver, observar, | <i>beheld</i> , | <i>beholden</i> , <i>beheld</i> . |
| <i>to bend</i> , doblar, encorvar, | <i>bent</i> , R., | <i>bent</i> , R. |
| <i>to bereave</i> , despojar, | <i>bereft</i> , R., | <i>bereft</i> , R. |
| <i>to beseech</i> , suplicar, | <i>besought</i> , R., | <i>besought</i> , R. |
| <i>to beset</i> , rodear, sitiár, | <i>beset</i> , | <i>beset</i> . |
| <i>to bespeak</i> , encomendar, | <i>bespoke</i> , | <i>bespoken</i> . |
| <i>to bestead</i> , aprovechar, servir, | <i>bestead</i> , <i>bested</i> , | <i>bestead</i> , <i>bested</i> . |
| <i>to bewray</i> , hacer traición, ensuciar, R., | <i>betook</i> , | R. y <i>bewrain</i> . |
| <i>to betake one's self</i> , aplicarse, | <i>betook</i> , | <i>betaken</i> . |
| <i>to bethink</i> , reflexionar, | <i>bethought</i> , | <i>bethought</i> . |
| <i>to bid</i> , mandar, | <i>bade</i> , | <i>bidden</i> . |
| <i>to bind</i> , atar, encuadernar, | <i>bound</i> , | <i>bound</i> . |
| <i>to bite</i> , morder, | <i>bit</i> , <i>bate</i> , | <i>bitten</i> . |
| <i>to bleed</i> , sangrar, | <i>bled</i> , | <i>bled</i> . |
| <i>to blend</i> , mezclar (manchar), | R., | <i>blended</i> , <i>blent</i> . |
| <i>to blood-let</i> , sangrar (á uno), | <i>blood-let</i> , | <i>blood-let</i> . |
| <i>to blow</i> , soplar, | <i>blew</i> , | <i>blown</i> . |
| <i>to break</i> , romper, quebrar, | <i>broke</i> , <i>brake</i> , A., | <i>broken</i> . |
| <i>to breed</i> , criar, enjembrar, | <i>bred</i> , | <i>bred</i> . |
| <i>to bring</i> , traer, | <i>brought</i> , | <i>brought</i> . |
| <i>to build</i> , edificar, | <i>built</i> , R., | <i>built</i> . |
| <i>to burn</i> , quemar, | <i>burnt</i> , | <i>burnt</i> . |
| <i>to burst</i> , reventar, | <i>burst</i> , | <i>burst</i> . |
| <i>to buy</i> , comprar, | <i>bought</i> , | <i>bought</i> . |
| <i>to can</i> , poder, | <i>could</i> , | — |
| <i>to cast</i> , fundir, arrojar, | <i>cast</i> , | <i>cast</i> . |
| <i>to catch</i> , agarrar, | <i>caught</i> , R., <i>keight</i> , A. | <i>caught</i> , R. <i>kesh</i> , A. |
| <i>to chide</i> , reñir, regañar, | <i>chid</i> , <i>chode</i> , A. | <i>chid</i> , <i>chidden</i> . |
| <i>to choose</i> ó <i>chuse</i> , elegir, | <i>chose</i> , | <i>chosen</i> . |
| <i>to clap</i> , aplaudir, | <i>clapped</i> , | <i>clapt</i> . |
| <i>to cleave</i> , rajar, hender, | <i>cleft</i> , <i>clove</i> , | <i>cloven</i> , <i>cleft</i> . |
| <i>to climb</i> , trepar, | R., <i>clomb</i> , | R., <i>clomb</i> . |

| <i>Infinitivo.</i> | <i>Imperfecto.</i> | <i>Part. pasado.</i> |
|--|--------------------------------|--|
| <i>to cling</i> , agarrarse, | <i>clung</i> (<i>clang</i>), | <i>clung</i> (<i>clang</i>). |
| <i>to clothe</i> , vestir, | <i>R.</i> , <i>clad</i> , | <i>R.</i> , <i>clad</i> . |
| <i>to come</i> , venir, | <i>came</i> , | <i>come</i> . |
| <i>to cost</i> , costar, | <i>cost</i> , | <i>cost</i> . |
| <i>to cramp</i> , sujetar, dar calambre, | <i>R.</i> , | <i>cramp't</i> . |
| <i>to creep</i> , gatear, arrastrarse, | <i>crept</i> , | <i>crept</i> . |
| <i>to crop</i> , segar, acortar, | <i>cropped</i> , | <i>cropt</i> . |
| <i>to crow</i> , cantar (gallo), | <i>crew</i> , <i>R.</i> , | <i>crown</i> , <i>R.</i> |
| <i>to curse</i> , maldecir, | <i>cursed</i> , | <i>curst</i> . |
| <i>to cut</i> , cortar, | <i>cut</i> , | <i>cut</i> . |
| <i>to dare</i> , osar, atreverse, | <i>durst</i> , <i>R.</i> , | <i>dared</i> . |
| <i>to deal</i> , traficar, barajar, | <i>dealt</i> , <i>R.</i> , | <i>dealt</i> , <i>R.</i> |
| <i>to deem</i> , juzgar, determinar, | <i>R.</i> , | <i>R.</i> , <i>dempt</i> <i>A.</i> |
| <i>to die</i> , morir, | <i>died</i> , | <i>died</i> , <i>dead</i> (con <i>to</i> <i>be</i>). |
| <i>to dig</i> , cavar, | <i>dug</i> , <i>R.</i> , | <i>dug</i> , <i>R.</i> |
| <i>to dip</i> , remojar, sumergir, | <i>dipped</i> , | <i>dipt</i> . |
| <i>to do</i> , hacer, | <i>did</i> , | <i>done</i> . |
| <i>to draw</i> , tirar, dibujar, | <i>drew</i> , | <i>drawn</i> . |
| <i>to dream</i> , soñar, | <i>dreamt</i> , | <i>dreamt</i> . |
| <i>to drink</i> , beber, | <i>drank</i> , | <i>drunk</i> , <i>drunken</i> . |
| <i>to drive</i> , guiar, arrear, | <i>drove</i> , | <i>driven</i> . |
| <i>to drop</i> , gotear, destilar, | <i>dropped</i> , | <i>dropt</i> . |
| <i>to dwell</i> , habitar, residir, | <i>dwelt</i> , <i>R.</i> , | <i>dwelt</i> , <i>R.</i> |
| <i>to eat</i> , comer (en general), | <i>ate</i> , <i>eat</i> , | <i>eaten</i> . |
| <i>to fall</i> , caer, | <i>fell</i> , | <i>fallen</i> (<i>falln</i>). |
| <i>to feed</i> , alimentar, pacer, | <i>fed</i> , | <i>fed</i> . |
| <i>to feel</i> , palpar, sentir, | <i>felt</i> , | <i>felt</i> . |
| <i>to fight</i> , pelear, combatir, | <i>fought</i> , | <i>fought</i> . |
| <i>to find</i> , hallar, | <i>found</i> , | <i>found</i> . |
| <i>to flee</i> , huir, | <i>fled</i> , | <i>fled</i> . |
| <i>to fling</i> , arrojar, lanzar, | <i>flung</i> , | <i>flung</i> , <i>flong</i> , <i>A.</i> |
| <i>to fly</i> , volar, huir, | <i>flew</i> , | <i>flown</i> . |
| <i>to fold</i> , doblar, | <i>R.</i> , | <i>R.</i> , <i>folden</i> . |
| <i>to forbear</i> , abstenerse, | <i>forbare</i> , | <i>forborne</i> . |
| <i>to forbid</i> , prohibir, | <i>forbade</i> , | <i>forbidden</i> , <i>forbid</i> . |
| <i>to forecast</i> , prever, | <i>forecast</i> , | <i>forecast</i> . |
| <i>to foresay</i> , predecir, | <i>foresaid</i> , | <i>foresaid</i> . |
| <i>to foresee</i> , prever, | <i>foresaw</i> , | <i>foreseen</i> . |
| <i>to foretell</i> , pronosticar, | <i>foretold</i> , | <i>foretold</i> . |
| <i>to forget</i> , olvidar, | <i>forgot</i> , | <i>forgotten</i> , <i>forgot</i> . |
| <i>to forgive</i> , perdonar, | <i>forgave</i> , | <i>forgiven</i> . |
| <i>to forsake</i> , abandonar, | <i>forsook</i> , | <i>forsaken</i> . |
| <i>to freeze</i> , helar, | <i>froze</i> , | <i>frozen</i> . |

| <i>Infinitivo.</i> | <i>Imperfecto.</i> | <i>Part. pasado.</i> |
|---------------------------------------|---|-------------------------------------|
| <i>to freight</i> , fletar, | <i>fraught</i> , R., | <i>fraught</i> , R. |
| <i>to geld</i> , castrar, | <i>gelt</i> , R. | <i>gelt</i> , R. |
| <i>to get</i> , adquirir, ganar, | <i>got</i> , <i>gat</i> , A., | <i>got</i> , <i>gotten</i> , A. |
| <i>to gild</i> , dorar, | <i>gilt</i> , R., | <i>gilt</i> , R. |
| <i>to gird</i> , ceñir. | <i>girt</i> , R., | <i>girt</i> , R. |
| <i>to give</i> , dar, | <i>gave</i> , | <i>given</i> . |
| <i>to go</i> , ir, andar, | <i>went</i> , | <i>gone</i> . |
| <i>to grave</i> , engrave, grabar, | <i>graved</i> , | <i>graven</i> , R. |
| <i>to grind</i> , moler, | <i>ground</i> , | <i>ground</i> . |
| <i>to grow</i> , crecer, | <i>grew</i> , | <i>grown</i> . |
| <i>to hang</i> , colgar, | <i>hung</i> , | <i>hung</i> . |
| <i>to hang</i> , ahorcar, | R., | R. |
| <i>to have</i> , haber ó tener, | <i>had</i> , | <i>had</i> . |
| <i>to hear</i> , oír, | <i>heard</i> , | <i>heard</i> . |
| <i>to heave</i> , alzar, | <i>hove</i> , <i>heaved</i> , | <i>heaved</i> , <i>hoven</i> . |
| <i>to help</i> , asistir, cuidar, | <i>helped</i> , <i>holpe</i> , A., | <i>helped</i> , <i>holpen</i> , A. |
| <i>to hew</i> , cortar, hachear, | <i>hewed</i> , | <i>hewn</i> , R. |
| <i>to hide</i> , esconder, ocultar, | <i>hid</i> , | <i>hidden</i> , <i>hid</i> . |
| <i>to hiss</i> , silbar, | <i>hissed</i> , <i>hist</i> , | <i>hissed</i> , <i>hist</i> . |
| <i>to hit</i> , dar en blanco, | <i>hit</i> , | <i>hit</i> . |
| <i>to hold</i> , asir, parar, | <i>held</i> , | <i>held</i> , <i>holden</i> . |
| <i>to hurt</i> , dañar, herir, | <i>hurt</i> , | <i>hurt</i> . |
| <i>to jump</i> , saltar, brincar, | <i>jumped</i> , <i>jump</i> t, | <i>jumped</i> , <i>jump</i> t. |
| <i>to keep</i> , guardar, | <i>kept</i> , | <i>kept</i> . |
| <i>to kneel</i> , arrodillar, | <i>knelt</i> , | <i>knelt</i> . |
| <i>to knit</i> , hacer medias, | <i>knit</i> , | <i>knit</i> . |
| <i>to knock</i> , llamar á la puerta, | <i>knocked</i> , <i>knockt</i> , | <i>knocked</i> . |
| <i>to know</i> , saber, conocer, | <i>knew</i> , | <i>known</i> . |
| <i>to lade</i> , cargar un buque, | <i>laded</i> . | <i>laden</i> . |
| <i>to lap</i> , enroscar, involucrar, | <i>lapt</i> , | <i>lapt</i> . |
| <i>to laugh</i> , reír, | R. y <i>lough</i> , A., | R. y <i>lough</i> , A. |
| <i>to lay</i> , poner, colocar, | <i>laid</i> , | <i>laid</i> . |
| <i>to lead</i> , conducir, guiar, | <i>led</i> , | <i>led</i> . |
| <i>to leap</i> , saltar, | <i>leaped</i> , | <i>leapt</i> . |
| <i>to learn</i> , aprender, | <i>learned</i> , | <i>learnt</i> , R. |
| <i>to leave</i> , dejar, | <i>left</i> , | <i>left</i> . |
| <i>to lend</i> , prestar, | <i>lent</i> , | <i>lent</i> . |
| <i>to let</i> , permitir, arrendar, | <i>let</i> , | <i>let</i> . |
| <i>to lie</i> , acostar, yacer, | <i>lay</i> , | <i>lain</i> . |
| <i>to light</i> , alumbrar, encender, | <i>lit</i> , <i>lighted</i> , | <i>lit</i> , <i>lighted</i> . |
| <i>to load</i> , cargar, | <i>loaded</i> , | <i>laden</i> , R. y <i>loaden</i> . |
| <i>to lose</i> , perder, | <i>lost</i> (<i>lore</i> , <i>lorn</i> , A), | <i>lost</i> (<i>lorn</i> , A.). |
| <i>to make</i> , hacer, | <i>made</i> , | <i>made</i> . |
| <i>to mean</i> , significar, | <i>meant</i> , | <i>meant</i> . |

| <i>Infinitivo.</i> | <i>Imperfecto.</i> | <i>Part. pasado.</i> |
|---|---|--|
| <i>to meet</i> , encontrar, | <i>met</i> , | <i>met</i> . |
| <i>to melt</i> , derretir, | <i>melted</i> , | <i>melted</i> , <i>molten</i> . |
| <i>to misbecome</i> , desconvenir, | <i>misbecame</i> , | <i>misbecome</i> . |
| <i>to misgive</i> , causar recelo, | <i>misgave</i> , | <i>misgiven</i> . |
| <i>to misunderstand</i> , equivocarse, | <i>misunderstood</i> , | <i>misunderstood</i> . |
| <i>to mow</i> , guadañar, segar (heno), | <i>mowed</i> , | <i>mown</i> , <i>R</i> . |
| <i>to must</i> , deber, | <i>must</i> , <i>mote</i> , <i>A.</i> , | — |
| <i>to overbear</i> , sojuzgar, | <i>overbore</i> , | <i>overborne</i> . |
| <i>to overcome</i> , vencer, | <i>overcame</i> , | <i>overcome</i> . |
| <i>to owe</i> , deber (deudas ó favores), | <i>owed</i> , | <i>own</i> , <i>owed</i> . |
| <i>to overdo</i> , exceder, | <i>overdid</i> , | <i>overdone</i> . |
| <i>to overflow</i> , inundar, | <i>overflowed</i> , | <i>overflowed</i> . |
| <i>to overhear</i> , entoreir, | <i>overheard</i> , | <i>overheard</i> . |
| <i>to oversee</i> , inspeccionar, | <i>oversaw</i> , | <i>overseen</i> . |
| <i>to overset</i> , volcar, trastornar, | <i>overset</i> , | <i>overset</i> . |
| <i>to overslip</i> , omitir, | <i>overslipped</i> , | <i>overslipt</i> . |
| <i>to overtake</i> , alcanzar, | <i>overtook</i> , | <i>overtaken</i> . |
| <i>to overthrow</i> , trastornar, | <i>overthrew</i> , | <i>overthrown</i> . |
| <i>to outshine</i> , resplandecer, | <i>outshone</i> , | <i>outshone</i> . |
| <i>to outstand</i> , resistir, | <i>outstood</i> , | <i>outstood</i> . |
| <i>to partake</i> , participar, tener ó tomar parte, | <i>partook</i> , | <i>partaken</i> . |
| <i>to pass</i> , pasar, | <i>past</i> , <i>R.</i> , | <i>past</i> , <i>R</i> . |
| <i>to pay</i> , pagar, | <i>paid</i> , | <i>paid</i> . |
| <i>to put</i> , poner, | <i>put</i> , | <i>put</i> . |
| <i>to read</i> , leer, | <i>read</i> , | <i>read</i> . |
| <i>to ride</i> , cabalgar, montar á ca- ballo, | <i>rode</i> , | <i>ridden</i> . |
| <i>to rid</i> , librar, zafarse, | <i>rid</i> , | <i>rid</i> . |
| <i>to rend</i> , rasgar, | <i>rent</i> , | <i>rent</i> . |
| <i>to ring</i> , repicar, tocar la cam- panilla, | <i>rang</i> , <i>rung</i> , | <i>rung</i> (<i>rong</i> , <i>A.</i>). |
| <i>to rise</i> , levantarse, | <i>rose</i> , | <i>risen</i> . |
| <i>to rive</i> , rajarse, hender, | <i>rived</i> , | <i>riven</i> . |
| <i>to rot</i> , pudrirse, | <i>rotted</i> , | <i>rotten</i> . |
| <i>to run</i> , correr, | <i>ran</i> , | <i>run</i> . |
| <i>to saw</i> , serrar, | <i>sawed</i> , | <i>sawn</i> , <i>R</i> . |
| <i>to say</i> , decir, | <i>said</i> , | <i>said</i> . |
| <i>to see</i> , ver, | <i>saw</i> , | <i>seen</i> . |
| <i>to seek</i> , buscar, | <i>sought</i> , | <i>sought</i> . |
| <i>to seeth</i> , cocer, hervir, | <i>scethed</i> , <i>sod</i> , | <i>sodden</i> . |
| <i>to sell</i> , vender, | <i>sold</i> , | <i>sold</i> . |
| <i>to send</i> , enviar, | <i>sent</i> , | <i>sent</i> . |
| <i>to set</i> , poner, sembrar, | <i>set</i> , | <i>set</i> . |

| <i>Infinitivo.</i> | <i>Imperfecto.</i> | <i>Part. pasado.</i> |
|--|------------------------|-----------------------|
| <i>to shake</i> , estremecerse, sacudir, | <i>shook,</i> | <i>shaken.</i> |
| <i>to shave</i> , afeitarse, | <i>shaved,</i> | <i>R., shaven.</i> |
| <i>to shear</i> , esquilar, | <i>shore,</i> | <i>shorne.</i> |
| <i>so shed</i> , verter, derramar, | <i>shed,</i> | <i>shed.</i> |
| <i>to shew</i> ó <i>show</i> , mostrar, | <i>shewed, showed,</i> | <i>shewn, shown.</i> |
| <i>to shine</i> , lucir, brillar, | <i>shone, R.,</i> | <i>shone, R.</i> |
| <i>to shoe</i> , herrar, calzar, | <i>shod,</i> | <i>shod.</i> |
| <i>to shoot</i> , tirar, brotar, disparar, | <i>shot,</i> | <i>shot.</i> |
| <i>to shred</i> , picar, desmenuzar, | <i>shred,</i> | <i>shred.</i> |
| <i>to shrink</i> , encogerse, | <i>shrank,</i> | <i>shrunk.</i> |
| <i>to shrive</i> , confesar (se), | <i>shrove,</i> | <i>shriven.</i> |
| <i>to shut</i> , cerrar, | <i>shut,</i> | <i>shut.</i> |
| <i>to sing</i> , cantar, | <i>sang, sung,</i> | <i>sung.</i> |
| <i>to sink</i> , hundirse, | <i>sank,</i> | <i>sunk.</i> |
| <i>to sit</i> , sentarse, | <i>sat, sate,</i> | <i>sat, sitten.</i> |
| <i>to slay</i> , matar, | <i>slew,</i> | <i>slain.</i> |
| <i>to sleep</i> , dormir, | <i>slept,</i> | <i>slept.</i> |
| <i>to slide</i> , resbalar, deslizarse, | <i>slid,</i> | <i>slidden.</i> |
| <i>to sling</i> , tirar con honda, | <i>slung,</i> | <i>slung.</i> |
| <i>to slink</i> , escabullirse, abortar (entre las bestias), | <i>slunk,</i> | <i>slunk.</i> |
| <i>to slip</i> , resbalar (se), | <i>slipped, slipt,</i> | <i>slipt.</i> |
| <i>to slit</i> , rajar, hender, | <i>slit, R.,</i> | <i>slit, R.</i> |
| <i>to smell</i> , oler, | <i>smelt,</i> | <i>smelt.</i> |
| <i>to smite</i> , herir, golpear, | <i>smote,</i> | <i>smitten.</i> |
| <i>to snow</i> , nevar, | <i>snowed,</i> | <i>snown.</i> |
| <i>to sow</i> , sembrar (grano), | <i>sowed,</i> | <i>sown, R.</i> |
| <i>to speak</i> , hablar, | <i>spoke, spake,</i> | <i>spoken.</i> |
| <i>to speed</i> , acelerar, | <i>sped,</i> | <i>sped.</i> |
| <i>to spell</i> , deletrear, | <i>spelt,</i> | <i>spelt.</i> |
| <i>to spend</i> , gastar, | <i>spent,</i> | <i>spent.</i> |
| <i>to spill</i> , derramar, verter (líquidos), | <i>spilt, R.,</i> | <i>spilt, R.</i> |
| <i>to spin</i> , hilar, | <i>spun,</i> | <i>spun.</i> |
| <i>to spit</i> , escupir, | <i>spat, spit,</i> | <i>spitten, spat.</i> |
| <i>to split</i> , hender, dividir, | <i>split,</i> | <i>split.</i> |
| <i>to spread</i> , esparcir, | <i>spread,</i> | <i>spread.</i> |
| <i>to spring</i> , brotar, saltar, | <i>sprang,</i> | <i>sprung.</i> |
| <i>to stand</i> , estar en pié, | <i>stood,</i> | <i>stood.</i> |
| <i>to steal</i> , hurtar, pillar, | <i>stole,</i> | <i>stolen.</i> |
| <i>to step</i> , andar, dar un paso, | <i>stept, R.,</i> | <i>stept, R.</i> |
| <i>to stick</i> , pegar, fijar, | <i>stuck,</i> | <i>stuck.</i> |
| <i>to sting</i> , agujonear, punzar, | <i>stung,</i> | <i>stung.</i> |
| <i>to stink</i> , heder, | <i>stunk,</i> | <i>stunk.</i> |

| <i>Infinitivo.</i> | <i>Imperfecto.</i> | <i>Part. pasado.</i> |
|---|--------------------------|-------------------------------|
| <i>to strew</i> ó <i>strow</i> , esparcir, | <i>strewed, strowed,</i> | <i>strewn, strown, R., R.</i> |
| <i>to stride</i> , atrancar, dar trancos, | <i>strode, strid,</i> | <i>stridden.</i> |
| <i>to strike</i> , herir, golpear, | <i>struck,</i> | <i>struck, stricken.</i> |
| <i>to string</i> , encordar, | <i>strang, strung,</i> | <i>strung.</i> |
| <i>to strip</i> , despojar, desnudar, | <i>stripped,</i> | <i>stript.</i> |
| <i>to strive</i> , contender, esforzarse, | <i>strove,</i> | <i>striven.</i> |
| <i>to swear</i> , jurar (renegar), | <i>swore,</i> | <i>sworn.</i> |
| <i>to sweat</i> , sudar, | <i>swet, R.,</i> | <i>swet, R.</i> |
| <i>to sweep</i> , barrer, | <i>swept,</i> | <i>swept.</i> |
| <i>to swell</i> , hinchar, | <i>swelled,</i> | <i>swollen, R. y swollen.</i> |
| <i>to swim</i> , nadar, | <i>swam,</i> | <i>swum.</i> |
| <i>to swing</i> , balancear, columpiarse, | <i>swang,</i> | <i>swung.</i> |
| <i>to take</i> , tomar, | <i>took,</i> | <i>taken.</i> |
| <i>to teach</i> , enseñar, | <i>taught,</i> | <i>taught.</i> |
| <i>to tear</i> , despedazar, | <i>tore, tare, A.,</i> | <i>torn.</i> |
| <i>to tell</i> , decir, referir, | <i>told,</i> | <i>told.</i> |
| <i>to think</i> , pensar, | <i>thought,</i> | <i>thought.</i> |
| <i>to thrive</i> , medrar, prosperar, | <i>throve, R.,</i> | <i>thriven.</i> |
| <i>to throw</i> , arrogar, tirar, lanzar, | <i>threw,</i> | <i>thrown.</i> |
| <i>to thrust</i> , empujar, | <i>thrust,</i> | <i>thrust.</i> |
| <i>to tread</i> , pisar, hollar, | <i>trod,</i> | <i>trodden.</i> |
| <i>to unbend</i> , destorcer, aflojar, | <i>unbent,</i> | <i>unbent.</i> |
| <i>to undergo</i> , sufrir, padecer, | <i>underwent,</i> | <i>undergone.</i> |
| <i>to understand</i> , entender, com- prender, | <i>understood,</i> | <i>understood.</i> |
| <i>to undertake</i> , emprender, | <i>undertook,</i> | <i>undertaken.</i> |
| <i>to undo</i> , deshacer, arruinar, | <i>undid,</i> | <i>undone.</i> |
| <i>to vex</i> , enojar, vejar, fastidiar, | <i>vext, R.,</i> | <i>vext, R.</i> |
| <i>to wax</i> , encerrar, aumentarse, | <i>waxed,</i> | <i>waxed, R.</i> |
| <i>to wear</i> , traer, usar, llevar, | <i>wore, ware, A.</i> | <i>worn.</i> |
| <i>to weave</i> , tejer, | <i>wove,</i> | <i>woven.</i> |
| <i>to weep</i> , llorar, | <i>wept,</i> | <i>wept.</i> |
| <i>to wet</i> , mojar, humedecer. | <i>wet,</i> | <i>wet, R.</i> |
| <i>to whip</i> , azotar, | <i>R., whipt,</i> | <i>R., whipt.</i> |
| <i>to will</i> , querer, | <i>would, willed,</i> | <i>willed (en Escrit.).</i> |
| <i>to win</i> , ganar, | <i>won,</i> | <i>won.</i> |
| <i>to wind</i> , girar, dar cuerda, | <i>wound,</i> | <i>wound.</i> |
| <i>to withdraw</i> , retirarse, | <i>withdrew,</i> | <i>withdrawn.</i> |
| <i>to withhold</i> , detener, impedir, | <i>withheld,</i> | <i>withheld.</i> |
| <i>to withstand</i> , resistir, | <i>withstood,</i> | <i>withstood.</i> |
| <i>to work</i> , trabajar, | <i>R., wrought,</i> | <i>R., wrought.</i> |
| <i>to wrap</i> , envolver, empaquetar, | <i>wrapped, wrapt,</i> | <i>wrapt.</i> |
| <i>to wring</i> , torcer (la ropa), | <i>wrung, R.,</i> | <i>wrung, R.</i> |
| <i>to write</i> , escribir, | <i>wrote,</i> | <i>written.</i> |
| <i>to writhe</i> , torcer con violencia, | <i>writhed,</i> | <i>written.</i> |

Los verbos compuestos, como se ve, se conjugan como los verbos simples, de que son derivados.

Near, cerca; *to happen*, acaecer; *between*, entre.

To obscure, oscurecer; *sight*, vista; *although*, aunque.

In like manner, de la misma manera; *cricket-ball*, pelota.

Tema XX.

¿A qué hora se ha levantado V.? ¿Se ha despertado V. ó le han despertado (*waked*)? Yo nací (nacer, *to be born*) en el año 1829, el 25 de Marzo. No puedo sufrir este hombre, porque es muy malo. Mi hermano ha pegado al perro, porque le ha mordido. ¿Ha empezado V. á hablar inglés? Tan luego que sepa bien los verbos irregulares (*irregular verbs*), hablaré todos los dias. Han despojado á ese pobre (hombre) de toda su fortuna (*fortune*). El librero ha encuadernado mis libros; ¿encuadernará tambien (*too*) los suyos? Mi hermano ha estado enfermo; pero desde que (*since*) le sangraron, se halla bien (*he is well*). V. es un jóven bien criado (un bien criado etc.). ¿Me ha traído V. mis plumas, mi papel y mis libros? La casa quemó todo el dia. Hemos comprado una casa y un jardin. Han cogido (agarrado) al ladron y le han puesto en (*into*) (la) prision (*prison*). Felipe II. ha edificado el Escorial y los Reyes de España lo han conservado. Maldijo los pecados (*sins*) de su vida pasada y prometió (*promised*) vivir (*live*) y morir como buen cristiano (*christian*); y dos horas despues (*after*) estaba muerte. Los soldados pelearon como (*like*) leones (*lions*) contra los moros, (*against the Moors*) y los españoles ganaron la batalla (*battle*). Muchos caeron heridos (*wounded*), unos (*about*) cinco mil muertos (*killed*) y el resto (*rest*) huyó en todas direcciones (*in all directions*).

The reason of the moon's appearing as large as the sun, is, because she is so much nearer to us. For, at a total eclipse of the sun, which happens when the moon is in a right line (línea recta) between the sun and the earth, the sun is obscured from our sight, although his disk is 160 times as large as that of the moon. In like manner would the moon, when at full (llena), be hid by placing your cricket-ball in a line between your eye and her; yet you know, the ball is not

as large as the moon, but being nearer the eye, it is apparently (aparentemente) so. The moon's distance from the earth is 240 thousand miles, which is 400 times less than that of the sun.

What is the moon's distance from the earth?
240 thousand miles.

How much less than that of the sun?
400 times less.

Why does the moon appear as large as the sun?
Because she is much nearer to us than the sun.

When is there a total eclipse of the sun?
When the moon is in a right line between the sun and the earth.

Leccion XXI.

De los verbos reflexivos y recíprocos.

96. Los verbos reflexivos se forman con un pronombre compuesto, el cual como régimen, siempre sigue al verbo.

| | |
|--|---|
| Alabarse, | to praise one's self (alabar á uno (sí) mismo). |
| Me alabo, | I praise myself. |
| Te alabas, | thou praisest thyself. |
| El se alaba, | he praises himself. |
| Ella se alaba, | she praises herself. |
| Ello se alaba, | it praises itself. |
| Nos. nos alabamos, | we praise ourselves. |
| Vos. os alabais, | you praise yourselves. |
| V. se alabais, | you praise yourself. |
| Ellos, ellas se alaban, | they praise themselves. |
| Yo me lisonjeaba, | I flattered myself &c. |
| Me he lisonjeado, | I have flattered myself. |
| Me habia lisonjeado, | I had flattered myself. |
| Me lisonjearé, | I shall flatter myself. |
| ¿Se lisonjea V.? | do you flatter yourself? |
| No me lisonjeo, | I do not flatter myself. |
| ¿Me lisonjea V.? | do you flatter me? |
| Ellos me han lisonjeado, | they have flattered me. |
| ¿Se ha cortado su hermano? | has your brother cut himself. |
| El no se ha cortado á sí, sino á su hermana, | he has not cut himself, but his sister. |

97. Hablando de las partes del cuerpo humano, se usa del adjetivo posesivo, omitiendo por consiguiente el artículo definido y el pronombre reflexivo de los castellanos.

| | |
|-------------------------------|---|
| Ella se arranca los cabellos, | <i>she pulls out her hair</i> (su cabello). |
| El se ha roto el brazo, | <i>he has broken his arm.</i> |
| Me he dañado el ojo, | <i>I have hurt my eye.</i> |
| Me duele la cabeza, | <i>my head aches, ó I have a headache.</i> |

98. El pronombre impersonal *se* se traduce en inglés por *one*, cuando equivale á *uno*, indeterminado; por *we*, cuando se refiere especialmente á los que hablan; por *they*, refiriéndose á varios; por *people* ó *men* cuando se refiere á un gran número, y en los demas sentidos por la voz pasiva. *People* no se repite en la misma frase.

| | |
|--|--|
| Se come cuando se tiene hambre, | <i>one eats when one is hungry.</i> |
| Se me dijo que él habia llegado, | <i>I was told (fui dicho) that he had arrived.</i> |
| Se dice que es hombre honrado, | <i>he is said to be an honest man</i> (dicitur &c. en latin). |
| Dicen que es un borracho, | <i>he is said to be a drunkard.</i> |
| Me dicen que es un borracho, | <i>I am told that he is a drunkard.</i> |
| ¿Qué dicen de nuevo? | <i>{ what do they say new?</i> <i>{ what is the news?</i> |
| Ya se conoce á este hombre, | <i>we know that man.</i> |
| No se puede hacer lo que se quiere, | <i>{ we cannot do what we like,</i> <i>{ people cannot do what they like.</i> |
| ¿Se habla de eso? | <i>{ do they speak of that?</i> <i>{ is that spoken of?</i> |
| Se vende el vino á cinco chelines la botella, | <i>wine is sold five shillings a bottle.</i> |

99. Las expresiones mandar hacer alguna cosa etc., hacerse hacer, se traducen de un modo muy diferente en inglés. Lo que está en el infinitivo en español, se pone en el participio pasado en inglés, y el régimen ó acusativo siempre precede á dicho participio. Algunos ejemplos nos darán una idea clara.

| | |
|---------------------------------|---|
| Mando componer mi levita, | <i>I get my coat mended; = yo obtengo ó adquiero mi levita compuesta.</i> |
| ¿Manda V. hacer un pantalon? | <i>do you get trousers made? (hecho).</i> |
| Me hago hacer uno, | <i>I get some made.</i> |
| ¿Manda él lavar su ropa blanca? | <i>does he get his lincen washed?</i> |

| | |
|----------------------------------|---|
| Manda lavar sus camisas, | <i>he gets his shirts washed.</i> |
| Me he hecho hacer un gorro, | <i>I have got a cap made.</i> |
| Hágase V. componer los zapatos, | <i>get your shoes mended.</i> |
| Me hago limpiar el cuarto, | <i>I get my room cleaned.</i> |
| El ha mandado barrer su cuarto, | <i>he has had his room swept.</i> |
| Me hago comprar un chaleco, | <i>I have (get) a waistcoat bought.</i> |
| ¿Hace V. vender su caballo? | <i>do you get your horse sold?</i> |
| Lo mando vender, | <i>I get it sold.</i> |
| Mandar hacer, | <i>to have made; — to get made.</i> |
| ¿Quiere V. amendarme las medias? | <i>will you mend my stockings?</i> |
| Ya las he hecho remendar, | <i>I have already got them mended.</i> |
| Me quedarán 3 chelines, | <i>I shall have three shillings left</i> (quedados). |

100. Hay verbos que son reflexivos en castellano y que no lo son en inglés. Un buen diccionario y la práctica es el mejor medio para aprenderlas; sin embargo pondremos unos pocos aquí.

| | |
|------------------------------------|---|
| Me abstengo de comer carne, | <i>I abstain from eating meat.</i> |
| Me quejo de V., | <i>I complain of you.</i> |
| Me acuesto á las diez, | <i>I go to bed at ten o'clock.</i> |
| Me despierto generalmente á las 4, | <i>I awake generally at four o'clock.</i> |
| No me atrevo hacerlo, | <i>I dare not do it.</i> |
| Se ha casado con su prima de V., | <i>he has married your cousin.</i> |
| Me alegro de eso, | <i>I rejoice at it (I am glad of it).</i> |
| El se emborrachó, | <i>he got drunk.</i> |
| Los muchachos se batieron, | <i>the boys fought.</i> |
| Me arrepiento de esta falta, | <i>I repent of this fault.</i> |
| Siéntese V., | <i>sit down.</i> |
| Me admiro de ello, | <i>I wonder at it.</i> |
| Me deshize de él, | <i>I got rid of him.</i> |
| El se escapó, | <i>he ran away.</i> |
| Siempre me acuerdo de V., | <i>I always remember you.</i> |

101. Los verbos recíprocos se traducen por *one another*, el uno al otro, los unos á los otros; ó bien, *each other*, uno á otro, mutuamente.

| | |
|--------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| Nos amamos tiernamente, | <i>we love one another tenderly.</i> |
| Ellos se aman (mutuamente), | <i>they love each other.</i> |
| Nos hemos amado el uno á otro, | <i>we have loved one another.</i> |
| Se amarán el uno al otro, | <i>they will love each other.</i> |

Don, *gift*; corazón, *heart*; enteramente, *quite*.

Bienestar, *well-being*; gozo, *enjoyment*; semejante, *fellow man*.

Lograr, *to succeed*; llevar por objeto, *to aim at*; mejorar, *to improve*.

Juego de títeres, *puppet-show*; refugio, *refuge*; cama, *bed*.

Tema XXI.

¿Porqué se ha cortado V.? Porque he sido algo torpe (*rather awkward*). ¿Es su hermano quien se ha roto el brazo? No es mi hermano, es mi primo. ¿Qué se dice de nuevo? Se dice que el ejército español (*the Spanish army*) ha ganado la batalla de Tetuan bajo (*under*) el General Dⁿ. Leopoldo O'Donnel. ¿Quién ha ganado la batalla de Lepanto? Se lee en la historia, que los españoles bajo las órdenes de Juan de Austria ganaron la batalla de Lepanto. ¿Se ha hecho V. hacer una levita? Me he hecho hacer un pantalon, un chaleco, y una levita. ¿Manda V. vender su cebada (*barley*)? Mando vender mis caballos y mis vacas. ¿Se ha lavado V. las manos y la cara (*face*)? Todas (*every*) las mañanas me lavo las manos, la cabeza y el cuello (*neck*). ¿Porqué se queja V. de mí? Me quejo de V. porque veo que V. no trabaja mucho. ¿A qué hora se levanta V.? Me levanto tan luego que me despierto; generalmente me levanto á las cinco y cuarto. ¿Se escapó el ladron? Se ha escapado, pero le han cogido otra vez (*again*). Acuérdesse V. siempre de mí en sus oraciones (*prayers*). Me admiro de la bondad (*goodness*) de los hombres piadosos (*pious*) y de la malicia (*malice*) de los malvados. Es cosa hermosa, si los hermanos se aman mutuamente, porque es señal (*sign*) que Dios los ama. Me alegro de su felicidad; V. sabe buscarla donde se halla: en su propio corazon (*in one's own heart*).

It has been said that genius is often a fatal gift; and it is quite true that men of heart and talent who devote themselves (se dedican) to the happiness, the intellectual emancipation, the glory, the well-being, the nobler enjoyments of their fellow men, are very diversely rewarded. Amuse, divert, captivate the senses, flatter the material man, you will succeed. But what courage (valor) will you not require (necesitará V.), if you aim at improving the mind, enlarging the heart! In the world as at present constituted a master of puppet-shows is richer than a man of learning, a stage-dancer more prosperous than an artist. What number of great men have suffered for us, martyrs of our education! Tasso, Camoens,

Zurbaran, Cervantes, and so many others, poets or painters, whose last refuge was an hospital bed! If I were a man of genius, I should have some consolation in saying to the rich: "I may become what you are, but you will not become what I am." Artists entertain this thought, with all its influence it sustains (sostiene) them.

| | |
|---|--|
| What is said of genius? | That it often is a fatal gift. |
| How are men of genius rewarded? | Very diversely. |
| What requires the world as now constituted? | Amusement, flattery, stage-dancers and theatres etc. |
| What was the last refuge of many great men? | An hospital bed, or to die of hunger. |
| What may a man of genius say to the rich? | I may become etc. |

Leccion XXII.

De los verbos pasivos y del empleo del gerundio.

102. Los verbos pasivos se forman en inglés, como en castellano, con el participio pasado del verbo que se conjuga y el auxiliar *to be*, ser.

| | |
|-------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| Yo soy amado, | <i>I am loved.</i> |
| Era amado, | <i>I was loved.</i> |
| Fuimos alabados, | <i>we were praised.</i> |
| He sido recompensada, | <i>I have been rewarded.</i> |
| Habian sido castigados, | <i>they had been punished.</i> |
| Seremos amados, | <i>we shall be loved.</i> |
| Habrán sido amados, | <i>they will have been loved.</i> |
| Sé amado, | <i>be loved.</i> |
| Seamos amados, | <i>let us be loved.</i> |
| Sed amados, | <i>be loved.</i> |
| Haber sido amado, | <i>to have been loved.</i> |

OBSERV. Como se ve, el participio queda invariable.

| | |
|---|--|
| Los buenos hijos serán premiados y los malos castigados, | <i>the good children will be rewarded and the bad ones punished.</i> |
| V. habrá sido bien recibido, | <i>you will have been well received.</i> |
| El ministro ha sido llamado al palacio real, | <i>the minister has been called to the royal palace.</i> |

¿Por quién son los buenos niños *by whom are the good children*
amados? *loved?*

Son amados por sus padres, sus *they are loved by their parents,*
parientes y sus maestros, *their relations and their masters.*

103. Los verbos impersonales tienen, como en castellano, únicamente la tercera persona del singular. En inglés llevan el pronombre *it*, como sujeto.

| | |
|---|---|
| Llueve, <i>it rains;</i> | nieva, <i>it snows.</i> |
| Graniza, <i>it hails;</i> | truena, <i>it thunders.</i> |
| Yela, <i>it freezes;</i> | relampaguea, <i>it lightens.</i> |
| Llovia, <i>it rained;</i> | nevaba, <i>it snowed.</i> |
| Llovió, <i>it rained;</i> | nevó, <i>it snowed.</i> |
| Ha llovido, <i>it has rained;</i> | ha nevado, <i>it has snowed ó snowed.</i> |
| Lloverá, <i>it will rain;</i> | nevará, <i>it will snow.</i> |
| Pudiera que llueva, <i>it may rain;</i> | nieve, <i>it may snow.</i> |
| Que llueva, <i>let it rain;</i> | que nieve, <i>let it snow.</i> |
| Ayer tronó mucho, | <i>it thundered much yesterday.</i> |
| ¿Llueve ahora? | <i>is it raining now? does it rain?</i> |
| No llueve, graniza, | <i>it does not rain, it hails.</i> |

104. Todas las preposiciones, excepto *to*, exigen el verbo en el gerundio, cuando en español está en el infinitivo.

| | |
|--|--|
| Soy aficionado (ó me gusta) á la lectura (á leer), | <i>I am fond of reading.</i> |
| Se marchó sin decir nada, | <i>he went away without saying anything.</i> |
| Con hablar no hará V. nada, | <i>with speaking you will do nothing.</i> |
| Me impide el hacerlo, | <i>he hinders me from doing it.</i> |
| Lejos de ir, se quedó dos horas mas, | <i>far from going away he remained two hours longer.</i> |
| Estoy cansado de hablar, | <i>I am tired of speaking.</i> |
| ¿Hay alguna esperanza de lograrlo? | <i>is there any hope of succeeding in it?</i> |

105. El participio presente ó gerundio puede emplearse como sustantivo, adjetivo y participio activo, lo que da lugar á las siguientes observaciones.

1) Empleado como sustantivo debe ir precedido de un artículo y seguido de *of*, si le sigue otro sustantivo.

| | |
|---|--|
| Para aprender alguna cosa bien, se necesita aplicacion, | <i>the learning of anything well requires application.</i> |
| La lectura es muy divertida, | <i>reading is very amusing.</i> |
| La llegada de su padre le sorprendió, | <i>the coming of his father surprised him.</i> |

- 2) Cuando el gerundio va precedido de un adjetivo posesivo, se puede poner el *of* ó *no*; pero cuando hay preposicion despues, no se puede hacer uso del *of*.

El aprender las matemáticas le fué útil, *his studying (of) mathematics was useful to him.*
 Su descuido en el estudio le hará desgraciado, *his neglecting to study will make him unhappy.*

- 3) Se usa del gerundio inglés á menudo en lugar del infinitivo español, ó de otros tiempos precedidos de *que*.

Lo veo venir, *I see him coming.*
 Le vi hacerlo, *I saw him doing it.*
 ¿Le ve V. orar? *do you see him praying?*
 Le vi cantar misa, *I heard him singing mass.*
 El es hombre jactancioso, *he is a boasting man.*
 Al leer la carta se desmayó, *on reading the letter, he fainted.*
 ¿Evita V. los pecados (el pecar)? *do you avoid sinning?*
 Escuchar, *to listen*; — pólvora, *gunpowder*.
 Inventar, *to invent*; — imprenta, *printing*.
 Puente, *bridge*; — cochino, *pig*.

Tema XXII.

¿Qué ha hecho este hombre? No ha hecho nada. ¿Fueron sus hijos alabados? No fueron alabados, porque son perezosos. ¿No son alabados los perezosos? Solo (*only*) los aplicados y los buenos son alabados y premiados; pero los perezosos son castigados. ¿He sido llamado? No sé; creo que él ha sido llamado. ¿Se acuerda V. de mi padre? Me acuerdo muy bien de él. ¿Se acordaba él de lo que le decia? No se acordaba, es muy olvidadizo (*forgetful*). ¿Ve V. estos hombres? Los veo venir. ¿Ha llovido? No ha llovido, ha nevado. ¿Cree V. que lloverá esta tarde (*evening*)? Creo que no lloverá, porque no hace calor. ¿Está V. cansado de leer? No estoy cansado de leer; pero estoy cansado de escribir. El aprender los idiomas extraños (*foreign*) es muy útil á los jóvenes que se dedican al comercio (*trade*), á la política (*politics*) ó á la iglesia. El descuido en el estudio de esos idiomas puede acarreararnos (*bring upon us*) muchos pesares (*sorrows*); por consiguiente el aprenderlos, siente bien (*behoves*) (á) un jóven. Si no lloviese saldria (*to go out*). Que llueva,

eso no me impedirá de salir. ¿Se ha ido su amigo? Se ha ido sin decir una sola palabra (*one single word*). ¿Le gusta á V. la lectura? Me gusta mucho (*very much*).

Does your little brother know his lesson? I think he knows it; if you will hear him, he will say it to you. I will ask him questions, let him answer me. Listen to me, my dear boy; who discovered America? Christopher Columbus. In what year did he discover it? In the year one thousand four hundred and ninety-two. Where was gunpowder invented? It was invented at Freiburg by a monk called Berthold Schwarz, in the year one thousand three hundred and eighty-two. Where was printing invented? At Mainz, by John Guttenberg, in the year one thousand four hundred and forty. How many inhabitants does Paris contain? They reckon above a million and a half of inhabitants, a thousand streets, fifty thousand houses, four hundred churches, twenty six hospitals, twenty nine bridges, seventy seven thousand oxen, one hundred and twenty thousand calves, five hundred and forty thousand sheep, and thirty two thousand pigs are annually consumed there.

Leccion XXIII.

Observaciones generales sobre los verbos.

106. La negacion por regla general sigue al verbo, ó á su auxiliar, si es forma compuesta; pero se pone inmediatamente *antes* del verbo en los infinitivos y en el gerundio.

| | |
|--|---|
| No habiendo recibido carta de él, | <i>not having received any letter from him, I did not answer him.</i> |
| no le he contestado, | <i>from him, I did not answer him.</i> |
| V. debe tener cuidado de caer, | <i>you must take care not to fall.</i> |
| No viendo á V. me fuí, | <i>not seeing you, I went away.</i> |
| El lo ha hecho no pudiendo menos de hacerlo, | <i>he did it, not being able to do otherwise (de otra manera).</i> |
| Lo siento no haberlo hecho, | <i>I am sorry not to have done it, ó I am sorry for not having done it.</i> |
| Sentirlo, | <i>to be sorry for.</i> |
| Alegrarse de, | <i>to be glad at.</i> |
| Enfadarse de, | <i>to be angry at.</i> |
| No es pobre ni rico, | <i>he is neither poor nor rich.</i> |

107. Despues de los pronombres indefinidos *whoever*, *whosoever*, *whichever*, *whichsoever*, *whatever*, *whatsoever*, *however* y *howsoever*, quienquiera que, cualquiera que, por mas que &c., se emplea en inglés el subjuntivo con *may* (potencial).

Cualquiera que sea la dicha que V. *whatever (may be the) happiness you*
tenga, soy mas dichoso que V., *enjoy, I am happier than you.*

Por grande que sea la fortuna de *however great may be the fortune*
que V. goce, puede V. perderla *you enjoy, you may lose it in*
en un instante, *an instant; or: whatever fortune*
you may enjoy, etc., or:
how great soever the fortune
may be etc.

Por muchos esfuerzos que hagamos, *whatsoever efforts we may make,*
no lo lograremos, *we shall not succeed in it; or:*
however great the efforts may be
we make, etc.

Hable V. de quien hablare, evite V. *of whomsoever you may speak, avoid*
la murmuracion, *slander.*

No me quejo de nada absolutamente, *I complain of nothing whatsoever.*

108. Los verbos *to go*, *ir*, *to come*, *venir*, *to stay*, *quedarse*, empleados en imperativo y seguidos de otro verbo, exigen este último tambien en el imperativo con la cópula *and*.

Vaya á ver, si está aquí, *go and see, whether he is here.*

Vaya á buscar mi sombrero, *go and fetch my hat.*

Quédese á comer con nosotros, *stay and dine with us.*

Venga á descansar en mi cuarto, *come and repose in my room.*

109. Cuando el verbo impersonal hace expresa la duracion de una accion aun presente, se pone en inglés el verbo en el pretérito pasado, y cuando se indica la época, se usa de los pronombres *this* y *these*, regidos por la preposicion *for*, que á veces suele sobreentenderse.

¿Hace mucho tiempo que está V. *have you been long in London?*
en Londres?

Hace tres años que estoy en Madrid, *I have been in Madrid these three*
years.

Hace una hora que estoy aguardando á V., *I have been waiting for you this*
hour.

?Desde cuándo está V. aquí? *how long have you been here?*

Hace dos años que no le veo, *I have not seen him for these two*
years.

Hace un año que falto del Escorial, *I have not been at the Escorial*
for a whole year.

Hace se expresa, por consiguiente, de tres modos:

- 1) Expresando el espacio de tiempo trascurrido desde que concluyó una acción hasta el momento de la pregunta, se usa en inglés de *is it since* (hace desde que) con el pretérito imperfecto.

¿Cuánto tiempo hace que vió V. á mi padre? *how long is it since you saw my father?*

- 2) Expresando el tiempo trascurrido desde que empezó una acción que dura aun, se usa del pretérito perfecto, con los pronombres *this* ó *these*, precedidos ó no de *for*.

Hace diez años que lo tengo, *I have had it these ten years, ó for these etc.*

¿Cuánto tiempo hace que tiene V. este caballo? *how long have you had this horse?*

Hace tres años que lo tengo, *I have had it these three years.*

- 3) Expresando el tiempo trascurrido desde que empezó la cesación, que aun dura, de un hecho cualquiera, se usa del mismo pretérito perfecto, pero no puede nunca suprimirse el *for*.

¿Cuánto tiempo hace que no como V.? *how long is it you have not eaten?*

No como hace dos dias, *I have not eaten for these two days. since.*

Desde que, *since*.
Desde que ví á V. se ha muerto mi hermana, *since I saw you my sister has died.*

¿Cuánto tiempo está V. aquí? *how long have you been here?*

Hace un año mañana, *it will be a year to-morrow, ó it will have been a year to-morrow.*

Dos horas há; 8 dias há, *two hours ago; eight days ago.*

Salida del sol, *rising of the sun (sunrise)*; sin embargo, *yet*.

Humanidad (hombres), *mankind*; maravilla, *wonder*.

Encontrar, *to meet with*; placentero, *pleasing*; espectáculo, *show*.

Parecer, *to appear*; variado, *variegated*; primoroso, *gorgeous*.

Fantasia, *fancy*; desvanecer, *to vanish*; brillo, *radiance*.

Contemplar, *to behold*; sabiduría, *wisdom*; alegría, *joy*.

Alzar, *to raise*; vivo, *lively*; rapto, *transport*.

Tema XXIII.

Siento mucho no haber escrito á mis primos, porque habrian venido á vernos (y visto nos). ¿De qué se alegra V.? Me alegro de su dicha de V., porque por mas feliz que yo sea, nunca puedo ser tan feliz como V. Par mas esfuerzos que V. haga para (to) estudiar (el) inglés, no logrará V. si no lee V. á los buenos autores (*authors*). Por mucha paciencia (*patience*) que tengamos con (*with*) nuestros semejantes, nunca tendremos bastante. Vaya V. á ver á su tia (*aunt*), porque está enferma. Venga V. á verme esta tarde. ¿Cuánto tiempo hace que está V. en Aranjuez? Hace quince dias que estoy aquí. ¿Cuánto tiempo hace que estudia V. inglés? Hace un mes que lo estudio. V. lo hablará dentro (*within*) de dos meses. No lo sentiria, porque es un idioma (*language*) muy útil. ¿Ha leído V. á los buenos autores? He leído las obras de Shakspeare y de Milton. ¿Cuándo las leyó V.? Las leí dos meses há.

What a magnificent phenomenon is every day exhibited in the rising of the sun! Yet how common is the observation, that indolence and the love of sleep prevent a great part of mankind from contemplating this beautiful wonder of the creation!

It is certain that we nowhere meet with a more glorious or more pleasing show of nature, than what appears in the heavens at the rising of the sun. The richest decorations, the most variegated and the most gorgeous scenery that human fancy can imagine, must vanish into nothing, when compared with a spectacle in which radiance and beauty are so pre-eminent. Adorable Being! (ser), in the glories of the morning I behold thy infinite wisdom and power! I aspire to thee, o God, the Father of the creation. The joy that inspires all nature, and this universal renovation of life and beauty, invite me also to raise my heart to Thee, with the most lively transports of gratitude and joy.

Leccion XXIV.

Sobre la traduccion de "Que".

110. La palabra "que" se traduce en inglés de varios modos, que expondremos brevemente.

- 1) Que, siendo relativo, se traduce por *who* ó *that*, refiriéndose á personas, por *which* ó *that* refiriéndose á cosas, y por *what* significando que cosa, que especie, ó expresando el demostrativo y el relativo, aquello que, lo que.

¿Ve V. al hombre que habla? *do you see the man who speaks?*
 Tengo el caballo que su hermano tenía, *I have the horse which your brother had.*
 ¿Qué tiene V.? (enfermedad etc.) *What is the matter with you?*

- 2) Que, conjuncion, se traduce por *that*.

Sé que V. tiene razon, *I know that you are right.*

OBSERV. Puesto entre dos verbos se puede expresar ó suprimir.

Creo que lo haga, *I believe (that) he will do it.*
 Espero que venga V., *I hope (that) you will come.*

- 3) Que no se traduce en las siguientes oraciones.

Creo que sí, *I believe so.*
 Creo que no, *I believe not.*
 Digo que sí, *I say yes.*
 Digo que no, *I say no.*

- 4) Despues del verbo dudar empleado negativamente, el que se puede traducir por *but*, positivamente por *whether* ó *that*.

No dudo que él lo haga, *I do not doubt but he will do it.*
 Dudo que lo haga, $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} I \text{ doubt whether he will do it.} \\ I \text{ doubt that he will do it.} \end{array} \right.$

- 5) Qué, precedido del verbo tener, se traduce por *to* con el infinitivo.

¿Qué tiene V. que hacer? *what have you to do?*
 No tengo nada que comer, *I have nothing to eat.*

- 6) Que, exclamativo, se traduce por *what* con el artículo indefinido *a*, cuando va seguido de un sustantivo, y por *how* (cómo), cuando va seguido de un adjetivo.

| | |
|-----------------------|--------------------------------|
| Qué hermosura! | <i>what beauty!</i> |
| Qué pícaro de hombre, | <i>what a rascal of a man!</i> |
| Qué día hermoso! | <i>what a fine day!</i> |
| Qué bueno V. es! | <i>how good you are!</i> |
| Cuán tonto es! | <i>how stupid he is!</i> |

7) El que en frases comparativas con el subjuntivo en español, se traduce en inglés por *as* con el infinitivo.

| | |
|------------------------------------|--|
| ¿Es tan feo que no satisfaga á V.? | <i>is it so ugly as not to satisfy you?</i> |
| No soy tan loco que lo crea, | <i>I am not so foolish as to believe it.</i> |

8) Que despues de comparativo se traduce por *than*; igualmente despues de *other*, otro.

| | |
|------------------------------|---|
| No otro que él lo ha hecho, | <i>no other than he has done it.</i> |
| El sabe mas que V., | <i>he knows more than you.</i> |
| No mas-que, no-sino, | <i>but.</i> |
| No tengo mas que tres duros, | <i>I have but three dollars.</i> |
| ¿Qué tiene su padre? | <i>what is the matter with your father?</i> |
| ¿Tiene algo? (algun mal) | <i>is anything the matter with him?</i> |
| Algo tiene, | <i>something is the matter with him.</i> |
| No tiene nada, | <i>nothing is the matter with him.</i> |

9) Cuando el verbo expresa necesidad, deseo, mandato ó bien voluntad de influir en el ánimo de alguien, entonces la frase se construye poniendo en caso objetivo (acusativo) el sujeto del subjuntivo español y este subjuntivo en infinitivo sin expresar la conjuncion que (construccion latina).

| | |
|---|---|
| ¿Escribirá el niño la carta? | <i>will the boy write the letter?</i> |
| Espero que la escriba, | <i>I expect him to write it.</i> |
| ¿Qué quiere V. que yo beba? | <i>what do you want me to drink?</i> |
| El desea que V. venga, | <i>he desires you to come.</i> |
| Deseo que V. coma conmigo, | <i>I desire you to dine with me.</i> |
| Desearía que él fuese allí, | <i>I should like him to go there.</i> |
| Me ha dicho que venga, | <i>he has told me to come.</i> |
| Me manda que entre, | <i>he bids me go in.</i> |
| Diga V. á su hermana que venga, | <i>tell your sister to come.</i> |
| La iglesia desea que sus hijos sean buenos, | <i>the Church desires her children to be good.</i> |
| Traducir de un idioma á otro, | <i>to translate from one language into another.</i> |
| Traduje esta obra del francés al español, | <i>I translated this work from French into Spanish.</i> |
| Idioma vivo (moderno). | <i>living (modern) language.</i> |

Dotar, *to gift*; fiel, *faithful*; antes bien, *rather*.

Cohecho, soborno, *bribe*; hacer traicion, *to betray*; aun mas, *nay*.

Mirada, *look*; pronto, *ready*; dog, *perro*; manada, *flock*.

Aspereza, *roughness*; vagar, extraviarse, *to straggle*; volver, *to bring back*.

Grito, *cry*; sagaz, *sagacious*; capaz, *capable*.

Tema XXIV.

¿Espera V. que el venga? Lo espero. ¿A qué hora espera V. que venga? No sé, pero me prometió venir á las seis de la tarde. ¿Sabe V. traducir del español al inglés? Lo sé; pero traduzco mejor del inglés al español. ¿Seria V. tan loca que lo creyese? ¿Qué tiene su madre de V.? Está algo indispuesta (*rather unwell*). ¿Cree V. que él tiene razon? Creo que sí; no, creo que no. Digo que V. no tiene razon. Y yo digo que sí, (que) tengo razon. ¿Sabe este niño cuánto hacen cinco por cinco? No es tan sabio (*learned*) que sepa esto. ¿Desea V. que yo beba un vaso de vino? Deseo que V. estudie su leccion. La Reina me mandó que fuese á palacio. Quisiera (*to like*) saber quién ha roto mi libro. No es otro que Juan quien lo ha roto. Qué hermoso dia hace hoy! Qué tonto es este niño y qué perezoso! Qué buenos son mis alumnos y qué aplicados! ¿Qué tiene V. que hacer? Tengo que escribir el tema (de) inglés. Este pobre hombre no tiene nada que comer; lo siento mucho (*I am very sorry for it*). ¿Hará su hermano la tarea (*task*) que le he dado? Dudo mucho de que la haga.

The dog.

The dog is gifted with that sagacity, vigilance and fidelity which qualify him to be the guard, the companion and the friend of man; and happy is he who finds a friend as true and faithful as this animal, who will rather die by the side (al lado) of his master, than take a bribe of a stranger to betray him. No other animal is so much the companion of man as the dog. The dog understands his master by the tone of his voice; nay, even (hasta) by his looks, he is ready to obey him. A dog will conduct a flock of sheep, and will use no roughness but to those which straggle, and then merely

to bring them back. The dog is said to be the only animal who always knows his master and the friends of his family; who distinguishes a stranger as soon as he arrives; who understands his own name, and the voice of the domestics; and who, when he has lost his master, calls for him by cries and lamentations. A dog is the most sagacious animal we have, and the most capable of education.

| | |
|---|---|
| What is the dog gifted with? | With sagacity, vigilance and fidelity. |
| To which office do those gifts qualify him? | They qualify him to be the guard, the friend etc. . . of man. |
| How does the dog understand his master? | By the tone of his voice, by his looks etc. |
| Whom does the dog always understand? | His master, the friends of the family etc. |

Leccion XXV.

Del empleo de los tiempos (tenses).

111. Hay seis tiempos en inglés: el presente (*present tense*), el perfecto (*the perfect*), y el futuro (*the future*) con sus variaciones, el imperfecto (*imperfect*), el pluscuamperfecto (*the pluperfect*) y el futuro anterior (*the second future*).

- 1) El tiempo presente expresa una acción presente, una costumbre, una acción pasada continuando en la actualidad.

| | |
|---------------------------------------|---|
| Yo le amo, | <i>I love you.</i> |
| El fuma, toma rapé, | <i>he smokes, snuffs ó takes snuff.</i> |
| Milton es admirado por su sublimidad, | <i>Milton is admired for his sublimity.</i> |

En la narración se emplea el presente histórico para dar más energía y viveza á la misma.

| | |
|---|---|
| César abandona la Galia, pasa el Rubicon y penetra en Italia con cinco mil hombres, | <i>Caesar leaves Gaul, crosses the Rubicon and enters Italy with five thousand men.</i> |
|---|---|

La forma compuesta expresa una acción empezada y aun no acabada:

| | |
|----------|-----------------------|
| Estudio, | <i>I am studying.</i> |
|----------|-----------------------|

- 2) El imperfecto representa la accion como acabada ó no en cierto tiempo pasado, ó bien como limitada por alguna circunstancia de tiempo ó lugar.

Rompió la botella y derramó el agua, *he broke the bottle and spilt the water.*
 María, Reina de Escocia, ha sido notable por su belleza, *Mary, Queen of Scots, was remarkable for her beauty.*
 Isabel la Católica ha sido una gran Reina, *Isabel (Elizabeth), the Catholic was a great Queen.*

- 3) El perfecto denota hechos pasados sin relacion necesaria al tiempo ó al lugar, como:

Los filósofos en vano se han esforzado investigar el origen del mal, *Philosophers have vainly endeavored to investigate the origin of evil.*

Pero por lo general denota:

- a) una accion acabada poco há:

Oí, he oido grandes noticias, *I have heard great news.*

- b) una accion hecha en un espacio de tiempo definido, como hora, dia, semana, mes, año &c., y no completamente pasado.

He pasado bien este dia, *I have spent this day well.*

- c) una accion acabada cuyas consecuencias se extienden hasta el tiempo presente.

Hemos descuidado nuestro deber, y por esto somos desgraciados, *we have neglected our duty and are therefore unhappy.*

- 4) El pluscuamperfecto expresa una accion acabada antes de otra igualmente acabada:

Todos los Lores habian tomado sus asientos, antes que el Ministro entró, *all the Lords had taken their places, before the Minister came.*

- 5) El futuro presenta una accion á venir:

Volveré á veros y vuestro corazon se alegrará, *I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoice.*

Escribiré mañana por la mañana, *I will write to-morrow morning.*

- 6) El futuro perfecto (anterior) indica que una accion será ejecutada al ó antes del tiempo de otra accion futura.

Habré acabado mi leccion antes de las diez de la mañana, *I shall have got my lesson before ten o'clock in the morning.*

| | |
|---|---|
| Alquilar, | { to let (dar en arriendo), { to hire (tomar en arriendo). |
| Una casa para alquilar, | a house to be let. |
| Se alquila un jardín, | a garden is to be let. |
| ¿Ha alquilado V. ya una casa? | have you already hired a room? |
| Voy á alquilar un carruaje, | I am going to hire a carriage. |
| Darse á comprender, | to make one's self understood. |
| V. ya se da á entender en inglés, | you make yourself already understood in English. |
| Juguemos una partida de ajedrez, | let us play a game at chess. |
| No, gracias, no soy tan fuerte como V., | I thank you, I am not your match (partido). |
| Pues, bien, probemos á las damas, | well, let us try at draughts. |
| Tomemos el tablero de damas, | let us take the draught-board. |
| V. me ha llevado dos piezas de una jugada, | you have caught two men of mine at once. |
| Basta para hoy, | that is enough for this day. |
| Adelantar, to come forwards; intencion, mira, view; la fé, the faith. | |
| Ahorrar, to spare; raciocinio, reasoning; inútil, useless. | |
| Continuar, to go on; volverse, to turn away; arrodillarse, to kneel down. | |
| Acabar, to bring to a close; desalentado, sin respirar, breathless. | |
| Consuelo, comfort; bendicion, blessing; marfil, ivory. | |
| Abrazar, to clasp; alzar, to raise; hácia, towards. | |

Tema XXV.

Sobre los verbos regulares é irregulares.

¿Se ha quemado la casa? (*quemarse = to burn down*). No se ha quemado la casa, sino la capilla (*chapel*). ¿Hallaba V. lo que buscaba? No lo hallaba. Es preciso perdonar á sus enemigos, pues hasta (*even*) los paganos (*heathens*) aman á sus amigos. Mi hermano ha dibujado un hermoso paisaje (*landscape*). Soñé la noche pasada que estudiaba la leccion de inglés. ¿Ha prestado V. dinero á su amigo? No le he prestado y tampoco le prestaré; pero (sí) le daré lo que me pide (*asks of me*), pues él que presta, se hace enemigos y mas me gustan (*I like better*) los buenos amigos. He pagado al sastre, de modo que (*so that*) me quedan solo tres reales. — Dentro de tres minutos me habré puesto (*sentado*) en (*on*) esta silla (*chair*). Si el libro se pusiera en la mesa, lo leeria. Llevé mi caballo al picadero (*riding-school*) afin de que se le montara (*fuese etc.*) mas á menudo. Quiera Dios (*would to*

God) (que) abandonen la sociedad (*company, society*) de los malos! Quiesiera Dios que no abandonasen la sociedad de los buenos! ¿Ha bebido su tío un vaso de agua? Ha bebido un vaso de leche (*milk*). Atravesó el río á nado (*to swim over*). He usado esta levita durante dos años. Esta levita está usada (*to wear out*). Jesus lloró amargamente (*bitterly*). Han emprendido lo que no pueden llevar á cabo (*to bring about*). ¿Cómo se deletrea esta palabra? Se deletrea así. El niño ha dormido toda la noche. Resbalé y caí en el suelo (*down*). ¿Cuánto ha gastado V. en Madrid? He gastado treinta reales. No es mucho; yo gasté tres duros, seis reales. Me he puesto (*to put on*) los zapatos. ¿Se ha puesto V. las medias? No me las he puesto.

Last moments of Mary, Queen of Scots.

The dean of Peterborough, the protestant ecclesiastic, whom Mary had refused to see, came forward to the foot of the platform, and most absurdly commenced an address to her, with a view to convert her to the protestant faith. Mary interrupted him, saying that she had been born and lived a catholic, and she was resolved so to die; and she asked him to spare her his useless reasonings. The dean persisted in going on. Mary turned away from him, kneeled down, and began to offer a Latin prayer. The dean soon brought his ministrations to a close, and then Mary prayed for some time, in a distinct and fervent voice, in English, the large company listening with breathless attention. She prayed for her own soul (alma) and that she might have comfort from heaven in the agony of death. She implored God's blessing upon France; upon Scotland; upon England; upon Queen Elisabeth; and, more than all, upon her son. During this time she held the ivory crucifix in her hand, clasping it and raising it from time to time toward heaven.

With what view did the dean of Peterborough commence an address to Mary?

With the view to convert her to the protestant faith.

What did Mary say?

That she had been born and lived a catholic, and was resolved etc.

| | |
|--|---|
| <i>What did she do afterwards?</i> | <i>She turned away from him, kneeled down and offered a Latin prayer.</i> |
| <i>Upon whom did she implore God's blessing?</i> | <i>Upon France, upon Scotland, upon England, upon Queen Elizabeth, and especially upon her own son.</i> |

Leccion XXVI.

Modismos.

112. Como los verbos auxiliares así hay tambien algunos verbos adjetivos que no exigen la preposicion *to*, si depende de ellos otro verbo en el infinitivo.

| | |
|--|---|
| Le mando entrar, | <i>I bid him come in.</i> |
| No me atrevo á decirlo, | <i>I dare not say it (tampoco exige do).</i> |
| El se atrevió á contradecirme, | <i>he dared contradict me.</i> |
| Yo te hago levantar, | <i>I make you rise.</i> |
| Le oigo cantar, | <i>I hear him sing ó singing.</i> |
| Yo os hago escribir, | <i>I make you write.</i> |
| ¿Le gusta á V. la caza? | <i>do you like hunting ó to hunt?</i> |
| Me gusta pescar, | <i>I like fishing.</i> |
| ¿Le gusta á V. la pintura? | <i>are you fond (aficionado) of painting?</i> |
| Me gusta la arquitectura y la escultura, | <i>I am fond of architecture and sculpture.</i> |

113. La expresion acabar de con un infinitivo se traduce en inglés con el adverbio *just* (justamente, al instante) y el tiempo pasado.

| | |
|--------------------------------|--|
| Acabo de llegar, | <i>I have just arrived (he llegado al instante).</i> |
| Acaba de escribir, | <i>he has just done writing.</i> |
| Acabamos de publicar una obra, | <i>we have just published a work.</i> |
| Acabo de verlo, | <i>I have just now seen him.</i> |

114. Dos verbos defectivos anticuados, empleados algunas veces en libros jocosos, son *quoth*, y *mote*, en la forma siguiente.

Quoth I, dije yo; *quoth he*, dijo él; *so mote it be*, así sea.

115. Hay algunos verbos españoles que se traducen de dos modos en inglés, como: 1) saber, *to know* y *can*; el pri-

mero envuelve la idea de conocer, el segundo la de tener el talento, el arte de, ó bien la facultad física; saber hacer alguna cosa se traduce por *to know how*, saber cómo.

Yo sé escribir, *I know how to write; I can write.*
 El sabe leer y escribir, *he knows how to read and to write; he can read etc.*
 Sé hablar inglés, *I can speak English.*

- 2) Decir, *to say, to tell*; el primero es decir, referir las palabras textuales de otro; el segundo contar, relatar, informar.

El dijo que lo habia hecho, *he said he had done it.*
 El me dijo que lo habia hecho, *he told me, he had done it.*
 ¿Qué le decia? *what did he tell you?*
 No me decia nada, *he told me nothing.*
 ¿Qué dijo? *what did he say?*
 No decia nada. *he said nothing.*

- 3) Hablar, *to speak, y to talk*; el primero significa simplemente hablar; el segundo conversar, conferenciar, charlar.

V. habla bien, *you speak well.*
 Á los muchachos les gusta hablar, *boys are fond of talking.*
 El hablador, charlatan, *the talker.*

- 4) Hacer, *to make, to do*; el primero expresa un trabajo físico; el segundo un trabajo del entendimiento.

He hecho mi tarea, *I have made (ó done) my task.*
 ¿Qué ha hecho V.? *what have you done? (término genérico).*

Propiedades de algunos animales. *Properties of some animals.*

| | |
|----------------------|--------------------------|
| El leon brama, ruge, | <i>the lion roars.</i> |
| El oso gruñe, | <i>the bear growls.</i> |
| La zorra gañe, | <i>the fox yelps.</i> |
| El lobo aulla, | <i>the wolf howls.</i> |
| El caballo relincha, | <i>the horse neighs.</i> |
| Da un resoplido, | <i>he snorts.</i> |
| La yegua pare, | <i>the mare foals.</i> |
| El asno rebuzna, | <i>the ass brays.</i> |
| El toro brama, | <i>the bull bellows.</i> |
| La vaca muge, | <i>the cow lows.</i> |
| Ella pare, | <i>she calves.</i> |
| El carnero bala, | <i>the sheep bleats.</i> |
| La oveja pare, | <i>the ewe yeans.</i> |

| | |
|---|--------------------------------------|
| El puerco gruñe, | <i>the hog grunts.</i> |
| La cochina pare, | <i>the sow farrows.</i> |
| El gato maulla, | <i>the tom-cat mews.</i> |
| La gata pare, | <i>the she-cat kittens.</i> |
| El perro ladra, | <i>the dog barks.</i> |
| La perra pare, | <i>the bitch whelps.</i> |
| El gamo está en brama, | <i>the buck ruts.</i> |
| La cierva pare, | <i>the doe fawns.</i> |
| El gallo canta, | <i>the cock crows.</i> |
| La gallina pone huevos, | <i>the hen lays eggs.</i> |
| Ella cacarea, | <i>she cackles.</i> |
| Ella está clueca, | <i>she clucks.</i> |
| Ella empolla, | <i>she hatches.</i> |
| El pollo pia, | <i>the chicken pips or chirps.</i> |
| El palomo arrulla, | <i>the cock-pigeon coos.</i> |
| La paloma pone huevos, | <i>the dove lays eggs.</i> |
| El ganso grazna, | <i>the goose cackles.</i> |
| La abeja zumba, | <i>the bee hums.</i> |
| Da cera y miel, | <i>it makes wax and honey.</i> |
| Los ratones chillan, | <i>mice squeak.</i> |
| Los gusanos y todos los reptiles se arrastran, | <i>worms and all reptiles crawl.</i> |
| La serpiente silva, | <i>the serpent hisses.</i> |
| La rana enjendra y canta, | <i>the frog spawns and croaks.</i> |
| El pez nada, | <i>the fish swims.</i> |
| Un enjambre de abejas, | <i>a swarm of bees.</i> |

Plantar, *to implant*; propósito, fin, *purpose*; dotar, *to endow*.

Odio, *hatred*; pesar, *grief*; cólera, *anger*; celos, *jealousy*.

Dar origen, *to give rise* (alzar); facciones, *features*; labio, *lip*.

Suspiro, *sigh*; reproche, *rebuke*.

Tema XXVI.

¿Oyó V. cantar á los niños el domingo pasado? Sí, señor, cantan muy bien. ¿Le gusta á V. la pesca? No me gusta ni la pesca ni la caza; me gusta la música (*music*) y la pintura. ¿Cuándo ha llegado su cuñado de V.? Acaba de llegar; hace ocho dias que llegó. ¿Sabe su hermanito leer y escribir? No sabe escribir, pero sabe leer. ¿Qué ha dicho este hombre? No sé lo que ha dicho. ¿Qué le ha dicho á V. este hombre? Me ha dicho que era español. ¿Sabe V. hablar aleman? No sé hablarlo. Hablamos toda la mañana. — ¿Ruge el leon? El leon brama y la gallina cacarea. ¿Piará el pollo? Puede

ser que pie pronto (*soon*). ¿Podría el asno rebuznar si el gallo cantase? Si el perro ladrase, el caballo relincharía. Yo sé que los ratones no chillan cuando los gatos maullan. El bramar (gerundio) de los toros, el silvar de las culebras (*snakes*) y serpientes, el graznar de los gansos, el cantar de las ranas, el zumbir de las abejas, el gruñir de los puercos produjeron (*to produce*) tan desagradables, desapacibles (*ungrateful*) y ruidosos (*noisy*) sonidos, que el dormir era imposible (*that sleep was out of question*).

Besides an ability to perceive, think, or reason, we find the mind possessed of an almost infinite variety of other attributes or faculties, implanted in it for the wisest and most beneficent purposes. We behold it endowed with consciousness (conciencia), judgment, memory, imagination; with a power of choosing or refusing; with admiration and desire; hope and fear; love and hatred; grief and joy, transport (arrebato) and terror, with anger, jealousy, and despair. And we behold each of these faculties, as called into action, producing a correspondent effect upon (sobre, en) the organs of the body; giving rise to what the painters call Expression, or the language of the lips; lighting up the eye, and animating the countenance, invigorating the speech, and harmonising its periods on the contrary, filling the eye and the countenance with gloom or indignation, and the voice with sighs and bitter rebukes.

Of which faculties is the mind possessed? Of consciousness, judgment, memory etc. etc.

Tell me the rest of the powers of the soul. The mind is endowed with etc. etc.

Lección XXVII.

De los Adverbios.

116. Además de los adverbios calificativos (véase lección XIV.) hay adverbios de tiempo, de lugar, de afirmación, de

negacion, de comparacion, de órden, de cantidad y de modo &c.
Los principales son los siguientes:

1) *Adverbios de Tiempo.*

| | |
|---|---|
| Al presente, <i>at present.</i> | Al punto, <i>immediately.</i> |
| Ahora, <i>now.</i> | En seguida, <i>directly.</i> |
| Luego, en seguida, <i>presently.</i> | Ayer, <i>yesterday.</i> |
| Al instante, <i>instantly.</i> | Anteayer, <i>the day before yesterday.</i> |
| Hoy, <i>to-day.</i> | El otro día, <i>the other day.</i> |
| Por el presente, <i>for the present.</i> | En otro tiempo, <i>formerly.</i> |
| Pronto, volando, <i>quick (ly).</i> | Desde hace poco, <i>of late.</i> |
| Un momento há, <i>just now.</i> | Mañana, <i>to-morrow.</i> |
| Poco há, <i>recently.</i> | Mañana por la mañana, <i>to-morrow morning.</i> |
| Hasta ahora, <i>till now.</i> | Mañana por la noche, <i>to-morrow night.</i> |
| Anoche, <i>last night.</i> | Muy pronto, <i>very soon.</i> |
| La semana pasada, <i>last week.</i> | Pronto, <i>soon.</i> |
| Una semana há, <i>a week ago.</i> | Hoy por la mañana, <i>this morning.</i> |
| Quince dias há, <i>a fortnight ago.</i> | Esta tarde, <i>this evening; to-night.</i> |
| No hace mucho, <i>not long ago.</i> | Esta tarde, <i>this afternoon.</i> |
| Hace mucho, <i>a great while ago.</i> | Al día siguiente, <i>the following day.</i> |
| Hace algun tiempo, <i>some time ago.</i> | De hoy mas, <i>hereafter.</i> |
| Luego á luego, <i>by-and-by.</i> | De hoy en adelante, <i>henceforth.</i> |
| De aquí á un año, <i>in a year hence.</i> | Desde hoy, <i>from to-day.</i> |
| Lo antes posible, <i>as soon as possible.</i> | Antes de mucho, <i>before long.</i> |
| A menudo, <i>often.</i> | A lo primero, al principio, <i>at first.</i> |
| Nunca, <i>never.</i> | Temprano, <i>early.</i> |
| Siempre, <i>ever, for ever.</i> | A buena hora, <i>betimes.</i> |
| Rara vez, <i>seldom.</i> | Muy de mañana, <i>very early.</i> |
| A mas tardar, <i>at the latest.</i> | De pronto, <i>on a sudden.</i> |
| Al rayar el día, <i>at daybreak.</i> | A toda priesa, <i>with all speed.</i> |
| Día y noche, <i>night and day.</i> | A cada instante, <i>every moment.</i> |
| De día, <i>in the day.</i> | De noche, <i>in the night.</i> |
| Todavía no, <i>not yet.</i> | Un día sí, otro no, <i>every other day.</i> |
| Siempre, <i>always.</i> | De cuando en cuando, <i>now and then.</i> |
| En un tris, <i>in a trice.</i> | Casi siempre, <i>almost always.</i> |
| Desde entonces, <i>since.</i> | Otra vez, de nuevo, <i>again.</i> |
| Todos los dias, <i>every day.</i> | Las mas veces, <i>most times.</i> |
| Tarde, <i>late.</i> | Todo el día, <i>all day long.</i> |
| Apenas, <i>scarcely.</i> | Demasiado tarde, <i>too late.</i> |
| Siempre desde entonces, <i>ever since.</i> | Cuando, <i>when.</i> |
| | Entonces, <i>then.</i> |

2) *Adverbios de Lugar.*

| | |
|---|--|
| Aquí, <i>here.</i> | allí, allá, ahí, <i>there.</i> |
| De aquí, <i>hence, from here.</i> | De ahí &c., <i>thence.</i> |
| Por aquí, <i>this way.</i> | Por allí, <i>that way.</i> |
| En otra parte, <i>elsewhere.</i> | En ninguna parte, <i>nowhere.</i> |
| En alguna parte, <i>somewhere.</i> | En alguna otra parte, <i>somewhere else.</i> |
| En todas partes, <i>everywhere.</i> | En donde, <i>where.</i> |
| De donde, <i>whence.</i> | A donde, <i>whither.</i> |
| Por dónde, <i>which way?</i> | Todo derecho, <i>straight forward.</i> |
| De este lado, <i>on this side.</i> | Acá y allá, <i>up and down.</i> |
| De aquel lado, <i>on that side.</i> | Sobre la derecha, <i>on the right hand.</i> |
| Aquí arriba, <i>here above.</i> | Sobre la izquierda, <i>on the left hand.</i> |
| Arriba (escaleras), <i>up, up-stairs.</i> | Cerca, próximo, <i>near.</i> |
| Arriba, <i>above.</i> | Muy cerca, <i>very near.</i> |
| Abajo, <i>down, below.</i> | Mas cerca, <i>nearer.</i> |
| Lejos, <i>far.</i> | Aquí cerca, <i>just by.</i> |
| Hasta dónde, <i>how far?</i> | Al lado, <i>by.</i> |
| Hasta aquí, <i>as far as this place.</i> | Junto, <i>hard by.</i> |
| Hasta allí, <i>as far as that place.</i> | Aparte, <i>aside.</i> |
| Por aquí, <i>here about.</i> | Frente por frente, <i>over against.</i> |
| Al rededor, <i>round about.</i> | Encima, sobre, <i>upon.</i> |
| Delante, <i>before.</i> | Debajo, <i>under.</i> |
| Adelante, <i>forward.</i> | Detrás, <i>behind.</i> |
| | Hácia atrás, <i>backward.</i> |

3) *Adverbios de Afirmacion.*

| | |
|---|-------------------------------------|
| Sí, si de veras, <i>yes, yes indeed.</i> | Sin duda, <i>without doubt.</i> |
| Seguramente, cierto, <i>sure, to be sure.</i> | Indudablemente, <i>undoubtedly.</i> |
| De seguro, <i>assuredly.</i> | A la verdad, <i>indeed.</i> |
| Ciertamente, <i>certainly.</i> | Sin falta, <i>without fail.</i> |
| | Infaliblemente, <i>infallibly.</i> |

4) *Adverbios de Negacion.*

| | |
|-------------------------------------|---|
| No, <i>not, no.</i> | Absolutamente, <i>not at all.</i> |
| De ningun modo, <i>by no means.</i> | No solamente eso, <i>not only that.</i> |

5) *Adverbios de Duda.*

| | |
|---|---|
| Quizá, acaso, <i>perhaps.</i> | Muy probablemente, <i>very (most) likely.</i> |
| Probablemente, <i>probably, likely.</i> | Es decir, <i>that is to say.</i> |

6) *Adverbios de Interrogacion.*

| | |
|---|--|
| Cuánto, cuántos? <i>how much, how many?</i> | Cuántas veces? <i>how often, how many?</i> |
| Cuánto es? <i>how much is it?</i> | Porqué? <i>why?</i> |
| Cómo? <i>how?</i> | Dónde? <i>where?</i> |

7) *Adverbios de Comparacion.*

| | |
|--|---------------------------------------|
| Mas, <i>more.</i> | Principalmente, <i>chiefly.</i> |
| Menos, <i>less.</i> | Así, <i>like that, so.</i> |
| Mejor, <i>better.</i> | De ese modo, <i>in that manner.</i> |
| Peor, <i>worse.</i> | Precisamente, <i>exactly so.</i> |
| Mejor que mejor, <i>better and better.</i> | Despues de todo, <i>after all.</i> |
| Peor que peor, <i>worse and worse.</i> | Sobre todo, <i>above all.</i> |
| Ni mas ni menos, <i>neither more nor less.</i> | Al contrario, <i>on the contrary.</i> |
| Mucho mas, <i>much more.</i> | De otro modo, <i>otherwise.</i> |
| Mucho menos, <i>much less.</i> | Con tiento, <i>gently.</i> |
| | Particularmente, <i>particularly.</i> |

8) *Adverbios de Cantidad y de Número.*

| | |
|--|-------------------------------------|
| Tanto, <i>as much</i> (igualdad). | Mucho, <i>much, many.</i> |
| Tanto, <i>so much</i> (ponderacion). | Un poco, <i>a little.</i> |
| Bastante, <i>enough.</i> | Demasiado, <i>too, too much.</i> |
| Por poco, <i>ever so little.</i> | Del todo, <i>quite, entirely.</i> |
| Poco á poco, <i>little by little.</i> | Totalmente, <i>totally.</i> |
| Todo lo mas, <i>at most.</i> | Con abundancia, <i>plentifully.</i> |
| Poco mas ó menos, <i>about, pretty near.</i> | Una vez, <i>once.</i> |
| Al menos, lo menos, <i>at least.</i> | Dos veces, <i>twice.</i> |
| Poco, pocos, <i>little, few.</i> | Tres veces, <i>three times etc.</i> |

9) *Adverbios de Orden.*

| | |
|---|--|
| 1º.; Primeramente, <i>first.</i> | A la vez, desde luego, <i>at once.</i> |
| 2º.; En segundo lugar, <i>secondly.</i> | En fila, <i>one after another.</i> |
| En primer lugar, <i>in the first place etc.</i> | Del todo, <i>utterly.</i> |
| Por último, <i>lastly.</i> | Despues, <i>afterwards.</i> |
| Al fin, <i>at last, finally.</i> | En fin, al cabo, <i>at length, in short.</i> |

10) *Adverbios de Calidad y de Modo.*

| | |
|---|---|
| Bien, muy bien, <i>well, very well.</i> | En todas direcciones, <i>every way.</i> |
| Mal, muy mal, <i>bad, very bad.</i> | A lo que salga, <i>at venture.</i> |
| Ni bien ni mal, <i>neither well nor ill,</i> <i>neither right nor wrong.</i> | Hácia atrás, <i>backwards.</i> |
| Á las mil maravillas, <i>admirably well.</i> | Con mil amores, <i>heartily.</i> |
| | A mi gusto, <i>to my mind etc.</i> |

| | |
|--|------------------------------------|
| Fácilmente, <i>easily</i> . | Al tun tun, <i>at random</i> . |
| A fondo, <i>thoroughly</i> . | Desprevenido, <i>unawares</i> . |
| Apenas, <i>scarcely, hardly</i> . | Neciamente, <i>sillily</i> . |
| Al derecho, <i>on the right side</i> . | Adrede, <i>on purpose</i> . |
| Al revés, <i>on the wrong side</i> . | De broma, <i>in a joke</i> . |
| Bien (direccion), <i>the right way</i> . | En chanza, <i>in jest</i> . |
| Mal (direccion) <i>the wrong way</i> . | Por reir, <i>for fun</i> . |
| | De veras, <i>in good earnest</i> . |

OBSERV. 1. Los adverbios de lugar, *here*, aquí; *there*, allí; *where*, donde; van muchas veces seguidos de las preposiciones *of*, *de*; *by*, por; *upon*, sobre; *at*, en; *in*, dentro; *with*, con; y entonces ocupan el lugar de los pronombres, *this*, *that* y *which*.

| | |
|------------------------------|------------------------|
| De esto, <i>hereof</i> , | por: <i>of this</i> . |
| De eso, <i>thereof</i> , | » <i>of that</i> . |
| De lo cual, <i>whereof</i> , | » <i>of which etc.</i> |

OBSERV. 2. Los adverbios *often*, á menudo; *only*, solamente; *always*, siempre; *also*, tambien; *no longer*, ya no; *still*, aun; *yet*, sin embargo; *not yet*, todavía no; *seldom*, raras veces; *sometimes*, algunas veces; *soon*, pronto; *then*, entonces, pues; suelen preceder al verbo en la oracion afirmativa, y posponer en la negativa, en los tiempos simples; en los tiempos compuestos se colocan generalmente entre el auxiliar y el verbo.

| | |
|--------------------------|--|
| ¿Va V. á menudo al café? | <i>Do you often go to the coffeehouse?</i> |
| Raras veces voy allí, | <i>I seldom go there.</i> |

Tema XXVII.

¿Ha vuelto ya su padre de V.? Ya ha vuelto (*come back*). Apenas puedo creerlo. ¿Qué toma V. por la mañana, café (*coffee*) ó chocolate? Como chocolate, los franceses toman café y los ingleses toman té (*tea*). ¿Vió V. á menudo á mi amigo el Señor Tejada? Lo veo todos los dias por la tarde. ¿Va su hermano á veces á los toros (*the bullfight*)? Va raras veces. ¿Le escribe el Señor García de vez en cuando? Me escribe muy á menudo; me escribió la semana pasada. Puede V. mandarme las obras de P. Faber? Se las mandaré por el correo (*mail*) de mañana. ¿Llegaron Vds. á buena hora? Llegámos demasiado temprano; llegámos demasiado tarde. ¿Volverá V. pronto de su viaje (*journey*)? Volveré dentro de quince dias ó dentro de un mes. ¿De dónde viene su amigo? Viene de adentro (*within*). ¿Qué estacion (*season*) le gusta mas, la primavera ó

el verano (*spring or summer*)? La primavera me gusta mucho mas; porque no hace tanto calor, y sobre todo la naturaleza parece ser (*seems*) mas bonita que en ninguna otra estacion del año. Quédese V. un rato (*moment*), porque no podemos siempre vivir juntos. Apenas habia oido esto, que se marchó. He estudiado el inglés á fondo; se aprende facilmente. ¿Ha estudiado su primo las matemáticas? Las sabe á las mil maravillas; las sabe ni bien ni mal. Vaya V. hácia atrás ó hácia adelante. Hubo poco mas ó menos cincuenta personas. Hubo diez personas, todo lo mas. ¿Lo dice V. de veras? Sí, (que) lo digo de veras.

Leccion XXVIII.

De las Preposiciones.

1) Hay cuatro preposiciones en inglés para traducir el de español: *from, by, with, of*. Se usa de *from*, cuando hay separacion, distancia ó procedencia de un lugar, y siempre es signo de ablativo; de *by*, despues de un verbo pasivo seguido de un agente, y en caso contrario de *with*; de *of* despues de adjetivo y como signo de genitivo.

| | |
|--|--|
| Partimos de Aranjuez el quince, | <i>we started from Aranjuez the fifteenth.</i> |
| Recibí dos cartas de él, | <i>I received two letters from him.</i> |
| Fué pintado por (de) un famoso pintor, | <i>it was painted by a famous painter.</i> |
| El fué colmado de beneficios, | <i>he was overwhelmed with favours.</i> |
| Le surtiré á V. de efectos, | <i>I will furnish you with goods.</i> |
| Lleno de ardor, | <i>full of ardour.</i> |
| Lleno de orgullo, | <i>full of pride.</i> |

OBSERV. Toda preposicion que no rige acusativo es adverbio, lo que se demostrará en los verbos compuestos.

2) *Against*, contra, tiene dos sentidos, el uno marca la oposicion y contrariedad, el otro la continuacion y una época mas próxima.

| | |
|---|---|
| El que no está conmigo, está contra mí, | <i>he that is not with me, is against me.</i> |
| Volveremos para Navidad, | <i>we shall come back against Christmas.</i> |

3) *Among, amongst; between, betwixt;* se emplea *among* hablando de mas de dos cosas ó personas; hablando de dos solamente se usa de *between*.

Entre amigos todo es comun, *among friends all things are common.*
 Bendita eres tú entre todas las mujeres, *blessed art thou among women.*
 Hay gran diferencia entre los dos, *there is a great difference between the two.*

4) *At*, en, expresa reposo y se emplea en muchos modismos, que enseñarán los buenos diccionarios.

El está en casa, *he is at home.*
 Está estudiando, *he is at study.*
 ¿Qué piensa V. hacer? *what would you be at?*
 El perro trató de morderle, *the dog bit (snapt) at him.*
 ¿Quiere V. pasar por mi casa? *will you call at my house?*

5) *In, into*, en, dentro, al &c.; *in* se refiere al reposo, *into* al movimiento.

Le he visto pasearse en el jardin, *I saw him walking in the garden.*
 Le he visto ir al jardin, *I saw him going into the garden.*
 Le incitaron al juego, *they drew him into gambling.*

6) *On, upon*, sobre; úsase de *upon*, cuando se nombra el lugar sobre el cual se coloca alguna cosa; *on* es preposicion y adverbio; á menudo expresa continuacion de alguna accion ya principiado.

Cúbrase V., *put your hat (cap etc.) on (adverb.).*
 Ponga el libro sobre la mesa, *put the book upon (ó on) the table.*
 Lo haré por V., *I will do it on your account.*
 El toca el piano, el violin, *he plays on the piano, on the violin.*
 Prosiga V., continúe V., *go on (adverb. adelante).*
 Continúe V. leyendo, *read on (id.).*
 Palabra de honor, *on (upon) my honour.*
 So pena de muerte, *upon pain of death.*
 Compadecerse de, *to take pity on.*

7) *To*, á, al, á los. Es la preposicion que acompaña al dativo y tambien es signo del infinitivo. Se pone delante del nombre que designa el lugar á donde se va, ó la persona á quien se dirige, ó bien delante de la cosa á la cual se aplica.

Iré á Madrid, *I shall go to Madrid.*
 No se hacen bien ni á sí mismos ni á los demás, *they do good neither to themselves nor to others.*

¿Qué le importa?
Eso no me importa,
¿Está uno apurado para buscarse la vida en un país, cuyo idioma no sabe?
Le daré cuenta de su dinero,

*what is it to you?
that is nothing to me.
Is one hard put to, to find his living in a country, whose language he does not know?
I will account to you for your money.*

8) *By*, por, señala la causa que produce una cosa ó una accion, el motivo y los medios con ó por los cuales ella se hace; y tambien el tiempo, la proximidad y el lugar por donde se pasa.

Todas las cosas fueron creadas por la palabra de Dios,
Atravesaron el rio por medio de una lancha,
Tomará V. su camino por Burgos?
¿Guarda V. mucho dinero en su posicion?
Tomar otro nombre,
Pasé junto á V.,

*all things were created by the word of God.
they crossed the river by means of a boat.
will you take your way by Burgos?
do you put by (de lado) much money in your position?
to go by another name.
I passed by you (your side).*

9) *Till, until; to, as far as*, hasta, hasta que; los dos primeros se emplean hablando del tiempo; los dos últimos son locales.

Permaneceré hasta las cinco,
Hasta que al fin Satanás rompió el silencio,
Es cosa que nunca se oyó hasta ahora,
Desde Madrid hasta Toledo,
He ido hasta Sevilla,
No he ido tan lejos,
Hasta que vuelva,

*I will remain till five o'clock.
till at last Satan broke the silence.
it is a thing unheard of till now.
from Madrid to (as far as) Toledo.
I have gone as far as Seville.
I have not gone quite so far.
till he comes back.*

10) *For*, para, por, indica duracion de tiempo, causa, motivo, consideracion, precio &c.

Por muchos siglos,
Murió por su patria,
¿Cuánto pagó V. eso?
Me lo vendió por dos duros,
Por mí (amor á mí), por tí, por él,
Por amor de Dios, ayúdeme,
Por V. lo he hecho,

*for many ages (centuries).
he died for his country.
how much did you pay for it?
he sold it me for two dollars.
for my sake; for thy — his sake.
for God's sake, help me.
I have done it for your sake.*

11) *Before*, delante de, hablando de lugar; antes que, ó de, indicando el tiempo.

| | |
|---------------------------|---|
| Marchó delante de mí, | <i>he went before me.</i> |
| Saldré antes de las diez, | <i>I shall go out before ten o'clock.</i> |
| Llegámos antes que V., | <i>we arrived before you.</i> |

12) *Within*, dentro, adentro, en menos, á — se aplica al tiempo y al espacio.

| | |
|--|---|
| Un hombre corrompido dentro de si mismo lleva el infierno, | <i>a corrupted man within him hell he brings.</i> |
| Viene de adentro, | <i>he comes from within.</i> |
| Dentro ó á menos de un mes, | <i>within a month, or, a month's time.</i> |
| Está en el poder de la Reina de cambiar el ministerio, | <i>it is within the Queen's power to change the ministry.</i> |
| Está á mi alcance, | <i>it is within my reach.</i> |
| Mi hermano está por adentro, | <i>My brother is inside (adv.).</i> |

13) *Without*, afuera, fuera de, á menos que, sin. Este preposicion es directamente opuesta á *within*, excepto cuando va seguida de nombre ó de gerundio, entonces se traduce por sin.

| | |
|--|---|
| Está fuera de casa, | <i>he is without (doors).</i> |
| El no vendrá á menos que vayan á buscarlo, | <i>he will not come without being sent for (sin ser enviado por).</i> |
| ¿Viene V. de afuera? | <i>are you coming from without?</i> |
| V. no irá sin mi permiso, | <i>you shall not go without my leave.</i> |
| Por fuera, | <i>outside (adverb.).</i> |
| El libro es mas bonito por afuera que por adentro, | <i>the book is nicer outside than inside.</i> |

14) *Above*, de por encima, mas arriba, fuera de, indica elevacion y superioridad; opuesto á *under*, *beneath*, *below*.

| | |
|---|--|
| Por encima de la casa, | <i>above the house.</i> |
| Eso está fuera de mi alcance, | <i>that is above my reach.</i> |
| Sobrepuja mis fuerzas, | <i>it is above my strength.</i> |
| El arriba mencionado, | <i>the above-mentioned.</i> |
| El honor vale mas que la vida, | <i>honour is above life.</i> |
| La fé vale mucho mas que la incredulidad, | <i>faith is far above incredulity.</i> |
| Hubo mas de cien personas, | <i>there were above a hundred persons.</i> |

15) *Under*, *below*, *beneath*, bajo, debajo, abajo; *under* siempre es preposicion; *below*, bajo, debajo, fisica y materialmente; *beneath*, moralmente; son opuestas á *above*.

| | |
|---|---|
| El perro está debajo la mesa, | <i>the dog is under the table.</i> |
| ¿Está el perro sobre la mesa ó debajo? | <i>is the dog upon the table or below?</i> |
| Son indignos de la cólera de un hombre de bien, | <i>they are beneath the indignation of an honest man.</i> |

El barco está á la vela,
Bajo el reinado de Carlos V.,
Es menos de diez y ocho años,

*the ship is under sail.
under the reign of Charles V.
he is under eighteen years.*

Down como preposicion significa abajo y es opuesto á *up*.

Fueron rio abajo,
Bajo (voy abajo),
Subo,
Altos y bajos,
Arriba y abajo (escaleras),

*they went down the river.
I go down.
I go up.
ups and downs.
upstairs and downstairs.*

16) *After*, despues, denota el tiempo, el modo, la causa y la intencion; opuesto á *before*.

Despues de la batalla,
Despues de las tres,
La Reina se viste á la española,

*after the battle.
after three o'clock.
the Queen dresses after the Spanish fashion.*

Lo hice del mismo modo,
Preguntó por mí,
Pregunté por su salud,
Anda á caza de fama,
Aspira á la presidencia,

*I did it after the same manner.
he inquired after me.
I asked after your health.
he hunts after fame.
he aspires to the presidentship.*

17) *Away*, fuera, expresa la aversion, el apartamiento.

Fuera de aquí!
Mis amigos se marcharon,
Quita eso,

*away from hence!
my friends went away.
take that away.*

18) *Behind*, atrás, detrás, en zaga, opuesto á *before*, localmente. A veces se emplea en sentido figurado para expresar que una persona excede á otra en algo, sinónimo de *beneath*.

Se fué detrás del altar,
El no está tan adelantado como su
hermano de mucho,
Está tan listo como él,

*he went behind the altar.
he is far (de mucho) behind his brother.
he does not go behind him (no le va en zaga).*

19) *About*, al rededor de, acerca de, cerca de (poco mas ó menos), tocante, significa la proximidad del lugar, del tiempo, de la cantidad, &c.

No hablamos acerca (tocante al)
del asunto,

we did not speak about the business.

Compré unos doce metros,
¿Ha leído V. sobre ese asunto?
Estoy á punto de partir,
He oído decir mucho tocante á el,

*I bought about twelve yards.
did you read about the subject?
I am about to start.
I have heard much about him.*

¿Qué dice V. de mí?
Está para marcharse,

what do you say about me?
he is about going away.

20) *Over*, sobre, por encima, al otro lado, por, á &c.

El pájaro voló por encima (al otro lado) de la casa,

the bird flew over the house.

Está en deudas hasta los ojos,
Se lo he dicho repetidas veces,

he is in debt over head and ears.

Viajé por toda la España,

I told it you over and over (again).

El muchacho saltó al otro lado del foso,

I travelled all over Spain.

Le entregué el dinero,

the boy leaped over the ditch.

¿Ha pasado V. por alto ese tema?

I gave over to him the money.

¿Ha repasado V. ese tema?

have you passed over that exercise?

have you looked over that exercise?

OBSERV. 1. Distíngase bien cuando *over* es adverbio ó preposicion.

OBSERV. 2. Con el verbo *to be* expresa *over* la conclusion de alguna accion.

La funcion de la iglesia está concluida,

church is over.

Se concluyó el baile,

the ball is over.

Estoy perdido,

all is over with me!

21) *Opposite, over against*, en frente de.

Vive en frente de la iglesia,

he lives opposite (over against) the church.

22) *Beside, besides*, al lado de, fuera de; como adverbio ademas, sino.

Me sentaré á su lado,

I will sit down beside you.

No hubo nadie sino yo,

there was nobody besides myself.

No pido nada mas que el recuerdo de sus oraciones,

I ask nothing besides the remembrance of your prayers.

23) *With*, con (de, entre), opuesto de *from*.

Hablé con mi tio acerca de este asunto,

I spoke with my uncle about this affair.

Murió de hambre.

he died with hunger.

Me dió una cuchillada, un bastonazo,

he gave me a stab with the knife, a blow with the stick.

24) *As for, as to, as regards*, en cuanto á.

En cuanto á mí, puede V. salir,

as to (for) me, you may go out.

En cuanto á eso, hablaremos,

as regards that, we shall speak.

25) *Out*, fuera de, afuera; expresa tambien la razon de alguna accion, la separacion de alguna persona y la conclusion de alguna cosa.

| | |
|-----------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| El enfermo está fuera de peligro, | <i>the sick man is out of danger.</i> |
| Salgo (voy afuera), | <i>I am going out.</i> |
| Lo hizo de rabia, | <i>he did it out of rage.</i> |
| Eso se traslucirá, se divulgará, | <i>that will come out.</i> |
| A muertos y á idos no hay amigos, | <i>out of sight out of mind.</i> |
| El aceite se acabó, | <i>the oil is out.</i> |

26) *Near*, cerco de, junto, próximo, indica lugar ó cantidad.

| | |
|------------------------------|--|
| Tetuan está cerca de Madrid, | <i>Tetuan is near Madrid.</i> |
| Estuve cerca de extraviarme, | <i>I was near going astray.</i> |
| Cerca de 400 hombres, | <i>near four hundred men (menos de 400).</i> |

27) *During*, durante, sinónimo de *for*, cuando se refiere al tiempo.

| | |
|--------------------------------|---|
| Pasé el verano en Barcelona, | <i>I was at Barcelona during summer.</i> |
| Estuve allá durante ocho días, | <i>I was there during (for) eight days.</i> |

28) *Through*, por, al través de, de parte á parte, y con *out*, por todo.

| | |
|---|---|
| Entró por la puerta y salió por la ventana, | <i>he came in through the door and went out through the window.</i> |
| Es conocido por todo el mundo, | <i>it is known throughout the world.</i> |

29) *Beyond*, mas allá, al otro lado, marca el lugar y la superioridad.

| | |
|-------------------------------------|---|
| Me fui mas alla de Birmingham, | <i>I went beyond Birmingham.</i> |
| Eso está fuera de mi comprehension, | <i>that is beyond my understanding.</i> |

| | |
|---|-------------------------------------|
| <i>Considering his promise,</i> | vista su promesa. |
| <i>In the middle of the square,</i> | en mitad de la plaza. |
| <i>Even with, or on a level with the water,</i> | á flor de agua. |
| <i>On account ó because of that,</i> | á causa de eso. |
| <i>Amid ó amidst the dangers,</i> | en medio de los peligros. |
| <i>Across the river,</i> | al otro lado (atravesando) del rio. |
| <i>He swam across the river,</i> | atravesó el rio á nado. |
| <i>Towards father and mother,</i> | hácia, para con los padres. |

Tema XXVIII.

¿Cuántas cartas recibe V. de su padre? Recibo una cada quincena desde mi juventud (*up from my youth*). ¿Por quién fueron pintados esos cuadros? El uno fué pintado por Murillo y el otro por Zurbaran; los dos están llenos de vida. Entre nosotros dos nunca hay disputa (*disputing*). Entre los muchachos hay á menudo sus riñas (*fightings*). ¿Está su Sra. Madre en casa? No está en casa; está en casa de una amiga suya. ¿Porqué se cubre V.? Me cubro porque tengo frio. ¿Toca su amigo el piano? No toca el piano; pero toca muy bien la flauta (*flute*). Prosigamos. Esto está prohibido bajo pena de muerte. Compadézcanse Vds. de los pobres, porque mucho tienen que sufrir (*suffer*) y Dios os lo pagará. Estaría apurado para buscarme la vida, si no supiese la lengua del país. Moisés (*Moses*) nos cuenta como todas las cosas fueron creadas por la palabra de Dios, y el mismo Dios (*God himself*) nos dice que el cielo y la tierra perecerán (*to perish*), pero que sus palabras no perecerán nunca. Qué consolacion para los justos! Le suplico, por amor de Dios, déme V. una limosna. ¿Porqué ha hecho V. eso? Lo he hecho por amor á la virtud. Partimos del Escorial á las diez de la mañana y llegamos á Madrid á las once y media; por consiguiente se hace el camino (*way*) dentro de hora y media. ¿Dónde viene V. y adónde va? Vengo de adentro y voy afuera. V. no irá sin ser acompañado por mí. Entre la virtud y el vicio no hay comparacion: la virtud vale mas que todo lo demás. Bajo el reinado de Felipe II. fué edificado el Escorial, una gloria duradera (*lasting*) de la nacion española. ¿Por qué motivo (*on what account*) fué edificado? Por cumplir con un voto (*vow*) después de la batalla de S. Quintin. Pregunté por V. y me dijeron que habia V. salido. ¿Hablaron Vds. sobre el particular? Hablamos un rato largo sobre él, pero no pudimos convenir (*agree*). Le dije á V. repetidas veces que debia V. estudiar, de otro modo (*else*) estaria obligado á castigarle. ¿Dónde vive su hermano? Vive en frente de la Iglesia de S. Pablo, junto al teatro. Verdad es (*it is true*) lo que dice el refran (*proverb*), á muertos y á idos no hay amigos.

Leccion XXIX.

De las Conjunciones.

| | |
|--|--|
| Y, é, <i>and</i> . | A mas de eso, <i>besides</i> . |
| Ni — ni, <i>neither — nor</i> . | Asimismo, <i>likewise</i> . |
| O — ó, <i>either — or</i> . | Apenas, <i>scarce, scarcely, hardly</i> . |
| Sea, si (alternativa), <i>whether</i> . | Sin embargo, con todo, <i>notwith-</i> <i>standing, nevertheless, however,</i> <i>yet for all that</i> . |
| Si (condic.), <i>if</i> . | Es decir, <i>viz., that is to say, i. e.</i> |
| Así como, <i>as well as</i> . | A saber, <i>to wit</i> . |
| Tan — como, <i>as — as; — so — as</i> . | O de lo contrario, ó bien, <i>or else</i> . |
| Si no, <i>if not</i> . | Porqué? <i>why, what for?</i> |
| No mas que, sino, pero, á no ser por, <i>but</i> . | Porque, <i>because</i> . |
| Con tal que, <i>provided that</i> . | En tanto que, <i>meantime</i> . |
| En todo caso, <i>at any rate, in each</i> <i>case</i> . | Hasta que, <i>till, until</i> . |
| Caso que, <i>in case that</i> . | Ni mas ni menos, <i>just as</i> . |
| A menos que, <i>unless</i> . | Tampoco, <i>neither</i> . |
| Aunque, <i>though</i> . | Tambien, <i>too, also</i> . |
| Aun cuando, <i>although</i> . | Por tanto, <i>therefore</i> . |
| De suerte que, <i>so that</i> . | Además, <i>moreover</i> . |
| Aun, con todo, <i>yet</i> . | Entonces, <i>then</i> . |
| Cuando, <i>when</i> . | En fin, por fin, <i>in fine, in short</i> . |
| Antes que, <i>before</i> . | Así, <i>thus</i> . |
| Despues que, <i>after</i> . | En efecto, <i>indeed, in effect</i> . |
| Mientras que, <i>whilst</i> . | Hasta tal punto, <i>insomuch that</i> . |
| Sino tambien, <i>but also</i> . | Desde el momento en que, <i>so soon</i> <i>as; as soon as</i> . |
| Aun, <i>even</i> . | |

OBSERV. Del empleo de las conjunciones se ha hablado al tratar del subjuntivo.

De las Interjecciones.

| | |
|---------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| Válgame Dios! | <i>God bless me! bless me!</i> |
| Dios mio, Jesus mio! | <i>good God! my God!</i> |
| Ea, ánimo! | <i>cheer up! go on!</i> |
| Cómo! qué! | <i>how! what!</i> |
| Bravo! | <i>bravo!</i> |
| Bien, bueno! | <i>well! good! right! all right!</i> |
| Vival | <i>hurrah, huzzah!</i> |
| Viva el rey! | <i>long live the king!</i> |
| Cielos, Virgen santísima! | <i>heavens! good heavens!</i> |

| | |
|--------------------|------------------------|
| Oid! oid! | <i>hear! hear!</i> |
| Ay de mí! | <i>alas!</i> |
| Ba, por vergüenza! | <i>fie, pshaw!</i> |
| Qué lástima! | <i>what a pity!</i> |
| Alto! | <i>hold!</i> |
| Poco á poco! | <i>softly!</i> |
| Vive Dios! | <i>zounds!</i> |
| Sí! | <i>indeed!</i> |
| Vamos! | <i>come!</i> |
| Al asesino! | <i>murder! murder!</i> |
| Anda, véte! | <i>begone!</i> |
| Bien hecho! | <i>well done!</i> |

117. Muchas palabras inglesas provienen del latín y tienen analogía con las castellanas del mismo origen, tales son las terminadas en:

| | | |
|-----------------------------|--------------|--|
| dad, que se trad. generalm. | <i>ty:</i> | habilidad, <i>hability.</i> caridad, <i>charity.</i> |
| cion, » » | <i>tion:</i> | nacion, <i>nation.</i> imitacion, <i>imitation.</i> |
| sion, » » | <i>sion:</i> | provision, <i>provision.</i> |
| ble, » » | <i>ble:</i> | amable, <i>amiable.</i> inteligible, <i>intelligible.</i> |
| al, » » | <i>al:</i> | principal, <i>principal.</i> capital, <i>capital.</i> |
| ivo, iva, » » | <i>ive:</i> | activo, <i>active.</i> positivo, <i>positive.</i> |
| tico, tica, » » | <i>tic:</i> | fanático, <i>fanatic.</i> política, <i>politics.</i> |
| cia, » » | <i>cy:</i> | aristocracia, <i>aristocracy.</i> |
| oso, osa, » » | <i>ous:</i> | amoroso, <i>amorous.</i> |
| ioso, iosa, » » | <i>ious:</i> | espacioso, <i>spacious.</i> glorioso, <i>glorious.</i> |
| mia, » » | <i>my:</i> | academia, <i>academy.</i> |
| nia, » » | <i>ny:</i> | harmonía, <i>harmony.</i> parsimonia, <i>parsimony.</i> |
| sia, » » | <i>sy:</i> | cortesía, <i>courtesy.</i> hipocresía, <i>hypocrisy.</i> |

Tema XXIX.

Es preciso que los hijos sean amables para con sus padres, puesto que la ley natural y la ley divina lo exigen así.

Con tal que los paganos observen (*observe*) la ley natural, se salvarán (*to save*). Válgame Dios! ese pobre niño (se) cayó en el foso y echó á perder (*to spoil*) su nuevo (*new*) vestido. Como V. tratará (*to behave towards*) á sus amigos, asimismo le tratarán á V. Este jóven nunca aprenderá el inglés; sea que él no quiera, sea que no pueda; por tanto hará mejor dejarlo (*to leave off*). V. no me dijo nada de (acerca de) B.; pero él debe haber dejado para M. si me acuerdo bien (*right*). Raras veces se corrige (*to correct*) á un hombre ridiculizando (*to ridicule*) sus acciones. ¿Conoce V. á este hombre? Le conozco muy bien, pues tiene un gusto (*taste*) particular en ridiculizar (*to deride*) á sus adversarios (*adversary*). ¿Qué divisa (*motto*) hay en este libro? La siguiente: "la union de la fuerza." Cuando estaba en Paris, no era tan activo como cuando estaba en Londres. Si V. va á Madrid, voy yo tambien. Si V. no juega, no juego tampoco. ¿Está su hermano arriba ó abajo? No está ni arriba ni abajo, está fuera de casa. Los hombres bajos aspiran á menudo á los puestos mas altos. Las sesiones de las Cortes se acabaron. Durante el verano (se) va la gente al campo (*into the country*). Si V. confía este secreto (*trust this secret*) á su amigo, se divulgará pronto.

Leccion XXX.

Sobre los Verbos Compuestos y algunos Modismos.

118. Si al tiempo de preguntar ponemos en castellano: ¿no es cierto? ¿no es así? ¿no es verdad? se traduce en inglés poniendo dicha pregunta en la forma contraria á la del primer miembro de la oracion, por medio del auxiliar ya empleado ó de *do*, si no hay auxiliar.

| | |
|---------------------------------------|---|
| V. tiene calor, ¿no es verdad? | <i>you are warm, are you not?</i> |
| V. no tiene calor, ¿no es cierto? | <i>you are not warm, are you?</i> |
| V. volverá pronto, ¿no es así? | <i>you will come back soon, will you not (won't you)?</i> |
| ¿Estaba convencido de ello? | <i>he was convinced of it, wasn't he?</i> |
| V. no nos hará aguardar hasta mañana, | <i>you will not (won't) keep us waiting till to-morrow, will you?</i> |

¿Repasa el autor el libro? *Does the author look over his book?*
 Lo repasa, *he does* } *look over.*
 No lo repasa, *he does not* }

119. Los verbos pueden ser compuestos con preposiciones ó con partículas; en el primer caso el acusativo debe seguir á la preposicion; en el segundo precede á la partícula, si es pronombre personal.

| | |
|--|--|
| Me pongo el sombrero, | <i>I put my hat on.</i> |
| ¿Se pone V. los zapatos? | <i>do you put on your shoes?</i> |
| Me los pongo, | <i>I put them on.</i> |
| No me los pongo, | <i>I do not (I don't) put them on.</i> |
| ¿Se quita V. la levita? | <i>do you take off your coat?</i> |
| Me la quito y la pongo sobre el armario, | <i>I take it off and put it on the drawer.</i> |
| ¿Quiere V. buscar á mi padre? | <i>will you look for my father?</i> |
| Quiere buscarlo, | <i>I will look for him.</i> |
| Adquirir, ganar, obtener, | <i>to get (got, got).</i> |
| Me levanté á las cuatro, | <i>I get up at four (me obtengo arriba).</i> |
| Saldré de ese peligro, | <i>I will get out of that danger.</i> |
| El progresa, adelanta, prospera, | <i>he gets on, he gets forward.</i> |
| Le aventajaré, | <i>I will get above him.</i> |
| Vencí la dificultad, | <i>I got over the difficulty.</i> |
| Atravesé el rio, | <i>I got over the river (el otro lado de).</i> |
| Ir, | <i>to go.</i> |
| Tomo su nombre (voy por [bajo] su nombre), | <i>I go by your name.</i> |
| ¿Porqué se va V.? | <i>why do you go away (off)?</i> |
| ¿Porqué vuelve V.? | <i>why do you go back (atrás)?</i> |
| Iré por V. (le buscaré), | <i>I will go for you.</i> |
| Salgo, | <i>I go out.</i> |
| Prosigo, continúo, | <i>I go on.</i> |
| Entro, | <i>I go in.</i> |
| Subo, | <i>I go up.</i> |
| Bajo, | <i>I go down.</i> |
| Hacer, | <i>to make.</i> |
| Reparé el tiempo perdido, | <i>I made up for lost time.</i> |
| Me adelanté hácia él, | <i>I made up to him.</i> |
| Cerrad la carta, | <i>make up (fold) the letter.</i> |
| Le acaricia, estima, le hace mucho caso, | <i>he makes much of him.</i> |
| Transmito á V. mis bienes, | <i>I make my fortune over to you.</i> |
| Comprendo esto muy bien, | <i>I make that out very well.</i> |
| No puedo decifrar eso, | <i>I can't make that out.</i> |
| Le trato á V. sin etiqueta, | <i>I make free with you.</i> |

OBSERV. La práctica y el uso de un buen diccionario enseñarán lo mejor la variación de significado en los verbos compuestos.

120. En el habla familiar se emplean ciertas contracciones en los verbos; pondremos aquí las principales.

| A firm. | Negat. |
|---|---|
| Yo soy, <i>I'm</i> = <i>I am</i> (<i>aim</i>). | No soy &c, <i>I ain't</i> = <i>I am not</i> (<i>ain't</i>). |
| El es, <i>he's</i> = <i>he is</i> (<i>his</i>). | <i>he isn't</i> = <i>he is not</i> (<i>hisent</i>). |
| Somos, <i>We're</i> = <i>we are</i> (<i>uir</i>). | <i>We aren't</i> = <i>we are not</i> (<i>we arent</i>). |
| Sois, <i>you're</i> = <i>you are</i> . | <i>you aren't</i> = <i>you are not</i> . |
| Son, <i>they're</i> = <i>they are</i> . | <i>they aren't</i> = <i>they are not</i> . |

| | |
|---|--|
| <i>I wasn't</i> = <i>I was not</i> (<i>I uosent</i>). | <i>wasn't I</i> = <i>was I not?</i> (<i>uósent I</i>). |
| <i>he wasn't</i> = <i>he was not</i> (<i>hi uosent</i>). | <i>wasn't he</i> = <i>was he not</i> (<i>uósent hi</i>). |
| <i>we</i> } <i>weren't</i> = <i>were not</i> (<i>uérent</i>). | <i>we</i> } <i>were you not?</i> } |
| <i>you</i> } | <i>they</i> } |
| <i>they</i> } | |

OBSERV. Es importante observar que en la forma interrogativa, el sujeto sigue á la negación cuando hay contracción; y precede cuando no la hay.

| | |
|------------------------|--|
| ¿No escribe el hombre? | <i>Does the man not write?</i> ó <i>doesn't the man write?</i> |
| ¿No hablo yo? | <i>Don't I speak?</i> = <i>do I not speak?</i> |
| ¿No nos amábamos? | { <i>didn't we love each other?</i> { <i>did we not love each other?</i> |
| ¿No iría V. allá? | { <i>shouldn't you go there?</i> { <i>should you not go there?</i> |
| ¿No lo tomaría V.? | { <i>wouldn't you take it?</i> { <i>would you not take it?</i> |
| No seamos mezquinos, | { <i>letn't us be mean</i> — { <i>let's not be mean</i> — { <i>let us not be mean.</i> |
| ¿No quiere hacerlo? | { <i>won't he do it?</i> { <i>will he not do it?</i> |

El no lo hará,

{ *he shan't do it,*
 { *he shall not do it.*

¿No lo hará?

shan't he do it?
shall he not do it?

Tema XXX.

V. está estudiando, ¿no es verdad? V. no es estudiante, ¿no es así? — ¿Repasa V. su lección? La repaso; no la repaso, porque la sé muy bien. ¿Se ha puesto V. las medias? No me las he puesto todavía; pero me las pondré desde luego. ¿Cuándo buscará V. á su hermano? Iré por él á las tres y cuarto. ¿Venció V. todas las dificultades que se le presentaron en el estudio del idioma inglés? Las vencí todas. ¿Ha V. adelantado mucho (*very well*)? Adelanté bastante (*pretty well*). Yo subí y ellos bajaron. Vuelvo á Madrid porque he olvidado algo. Vaya V. y vuelva (*come back*) pronto. Se dice en inglés “*to come back*,” para expresar (*express*) el movimiento (*motion*) de allá para acá; y “*to go back*,” cuando hay movimiento de acá para allá. — ¿Han cogido al ladrón? No le han cogido, porque ha tomado otro nombre. — ¿Quiere V. escribir la carta? No quiero escribirla. ¿No quiere trabajar? No quiere. ¿Le trata V. sin ceremonia? No le trataré sin ceremonia, porque es hombre algo (*rather*) orgulloso. ¿Estamos muy contentos en el Colegio (*at college*)? Estamos muy contentos. Hay jóvenes que no están contentos en el Colegio; y hay gentes que no están contentos en ninguna parte. ¿Lo haría V. si yo se lo mandase? Si V. me lo mandase, no lo haría, porque no tiene V. derecho (*right*) para mandármelo. ¿No estuvieron Vds. nunca en la capital de España? Hemos estado otras veces. ¿No fué Isabel la Católica una gran Reina? Era la mujer mas notable de su tiempo (*of her age*). La biblioteca del Escorial contiene (*contains*) miles de manuscritos: ¿los estudiarán los jóvenes? Los estudiarán sin duda alguna y harán buen uso de ellos para la gloria de la España, su querida patria.

Apéndice I.

| Vocabulario | Vocabulary | Vocabulario | Vocabulary |
|--|---|--|---|
| De las cosas pertenecientes á la religion. | <i>Of things belonging to religion.</i> | De las cosas pertenecientes á la religion. | <i>Of things belonging to religion.</i> |
| Dios. | <i>God.</i> | El infierno. | <i>Hell.</i> |
| La Trinidad. | <i>The Trinity.</i> | Un ángel. | <i>An angel.</i> |
| El Padre. | <i>The Father.</i> | Un santo. | <i>A Saint.</i> |
| El Hijo. | <i>The Son.</i> | Los bienaventurados. | <i>The blessed.</i> |
| Jesu-cristo. | <i>Jesus Christ.</i> | Un mártir. | <i>A martyr.</i> |
| El Espíritu Santo. | <i>The Holy Ghost.</i> | Un profeta. | <i>A prophet.</i> |
| El Redentor. | <i>The Redeemer.</i> | Un evangelista. | <i>An evangelist.</i> |
| El Salvador. | <i>The Saviour.</i> | El evangelio. | <i>The gospel.</i> |
| El Criador. | <i>The Creator.</i> | Un apóstol. | <i>An apostle.</i> |
| Nuestra Señora. | <i>Our Lady.</i> | El diablo. | <i>The devil.</i> |
| La Santísima Virgen. | <i>The holy Virgin.</i> | El demonio. | <i>The demon.</i> |
| El cielo. | <i>Heaven.</i> | Los condenados. | <i>The damned.</i> |
| El paraíso. | <i>Paradise.</i> | El purgatorio. | <i>The purgatory.</i> |

Of church dignities.

| | | | |
|----------------|---------------------------|----------------|----------------------|
| El clero. | <i>The clergy.</i> | Un diácono. | <i>A deacon.</i> |
| El papa. | <i>The pope.</i> | Un subdiácono. | <i>A subdeacon.</i> |
| Un cardenal. | <i>A cardinal.</i> | Un clérigo. | <i>A clergyman.</i> |
| Un arzobispo. | <i>An archbishop.</i> | Un cabildo. | <i>A chapter.</i> |
| Un obispo. | <i>A bishop.</i> | Un abad. | <i>An abbot.</i> |
| Un canónigo. | <i>A canon.</i> | Una abadesa. | <i>An abbess.</i> |
| Un dean. | <i>A dean.</i> | Un monje. | <i>A monk.</i> |
| Un sacerdote. | <i>A priest.</i> | Un prior. | <i>A prior.</i> |
| Cura párroco. | <i>The parish priest.</i> | Una priora. | <i>A prioress.</i> |
| Un vicario. | <i>A vicar.</i> | El predicador. | <i>The preacher.</i> |
| Una parroquia. | <i>A parish.</i> | | |

Of religion and religious sects.

| | | | |
|----------------------------|------------------------|-------------------|------------------------|
| Un cristiano. | <i>A christian.</i> | Un judío. | <i>A jew.</i> |
| Un católico. | <i>A catholic.</i> | Un presbiteriano. | <i>A presbyterian.</i> |
| Un herege. | <i>A heretic.</i> | Un cuáquero. | <i>A quaker.</i> |
| Un protestante. | <i>A protestant.</i> | Un arriano. | <i>An arian.</i> |
| Un calvinista. | <i>A Calvinist.</i> | Un metodista. | <i>A methodist.</i> |
| Un luterano. | <i>A Lutheran.</i> | Los mormones. | <i>The mormons.</i> |
| Un pagano. [til.] | <i>A pagan.</i> | Un mahometano. | <i>A Mahometan.</i> |
| Pagano(<i>adj.</i>),gen- | <i>Pagan, heathen.</i> | | |

Of feasts.

| | | | |
|---------------------------|------------------------|-----------------------------|------------------------|
| Día de año nuevo. | <i>New-year's day.</i> | Domingo de Resurrección. | <i>Easter Sunday.</i> |
| La pascua de reyes. | <i>Twelfth day.</i> | Pascua de Resurrección. | <i>Easter.</i> |
| La epifanía. | <i>Epiphany.</i> | Pascua de Pentecostes. | <i>Whitsuntide.</i> |
| La candelaria. | <i>Candlemas.</i> | El Corpus. | <i>Corpus Christi.</i> |
| El carnaval. | <i>Shrovetide.</i> | El día de todos los santos. | <i>All Saints.</i> |
| Martes de carnestolendas. | <i>Shrove Tuesday.</i> | El día de difuntos. | <i>All Souls.</i> |
| Miércoles de ceniza. | <i>Ash Wednesday.</i> | Las cuatro temporadas. | <i>Ember week.</i> |
| La cuaresma. | <i>Lent.</i> | Día de Navidad. | <i>Christmas day.</i> |
| La semana santa. | <i>Holy week.</i> | Pascua de Navidad. | <i>Christmas time.</i> |
| Domingo de Ramos. | <i>Palm Sunday.</i> | | |
| Viernes santo. | <i>Good Friday.</i> | | |

Of church.

| | | | |
|----------------|----------------------|----------------|----------------------------------|
| Una iglesia. | <i>A church.</i> | El órgano. | <i>The organ.</i> |
| Un templo. | <i>A temple.</i> | El cementerio. | <i>The churchyard, cemetery.</i> |
| Una capilla. | <i>A chapel.</i> | Un entierro. | <i>A burial.</i> |
| Coro. | <i>Choir.</i> | El sepulcro. | <i>The grave.</i> |
| La sacristía. | <i>The sacristy.</i> | El ataúd. | <i>The coffin.</i> |
| El altar. | <i>The altar.</i> | Una oración. | <i>A prayer.</i> |
| El cáliz. | <i>The chalice.</i> | Orar. | <i>To pray.</i> |
| El púlpito. | <i>The pulpit.</i> | Un novenario. | <i>A novena.</i> |
| La misa. | <i>The mass.</i> | Un voto. | <i>A vow.</i> |
| Misa cantada. | <i>High mass.</i> | El bautismo. | <i>The baptism.</i> |
| Misa rezada. | <i>Low mass.</i> | La penitencia. | <i>Penance.</i> |
| Un campanario. | <i>A steeple.</i> | Un sacramento. | <i>A sacrament.</i> |
| Una campana. | <i>A bell.</i> | | |

| | | | |
|-------------|-----------------------------|-----------------------|------------------------|
| El credo. | <i>The Apostles' Creed.</i> | La sagrada escritura. | <i>Holy scripture.</i> |
| Los fieles. | <i>The faithful.</i> | La cruz. | <i>The cross.</i> |
| Un sermón. | <i>A sermon.</i> | El agua bendita. | <i>Holy water.</i> |
| La biblia. | <i>The bible.</i> | | |

Of man.

| | | | |
|--------------|---------------------|------------|-------------------|
| Adriano. | <i>Adrian.</i> | Horacio. | <i>Horatius.</i> |
| Alejandro. | <i>Alexander.</i> | Isabel. | <i>Elisabeth.</i> |
| Ambrosio. | <i>Ambrosius.</i> | Inocencio. | <i>Innocent.</i> |
| Alejo. | <i>Alexis.</i> | Jaime. | <i>James.</i> |
| Aristóteles. | <i>Aristotle.</i> | Juan. | <i>John.</i> |
| Arrio. | <i>Arius.</i> | Juanito. | <i>Jacques.</i> |
| Andrés. | <i>Andrew.</i> | José. | <i>Joseph.</i> |
| Bartolomé. | <i>Bartholomew.</i> | Justino. | <i>Justin.</i> |
| Basilio. | <i>Basil.</i> | Liberio. | <i>Liberius.</i> |
| Belisario. | <i>Belisarius.</i> | Lúcas. | <i>Luke.</i> |
| Caifás. | <i>Caiphas.</i> | Márcos. | <i>Mark.</i> |
| Cárlos. | <i>Charles.</i> | Marcelo. | <i>Marcellus.</i> |
| Cecilia. | <i>Cecilia.</i> | Mateo. | <i>Matthew.</i> |
| Domingo. | <i>Dominicus.</i> | Miguel. | <i>Michael.</i> |
| Estéban. | <i>Stephen.</i> | Pascual. | <i>Paschal.</i> |
| Fernando. | <i>Ferdinand.</i> | Felipe. | <i>Philip.</i> |
| Francisco. | <i>Francis.</i> | Pablo. | <i>Paul.</i> |
| Galo. | <i>Gall.</i> | Pedro. | <i>Peter.</i> |
| Jorge. | <i>George.</i> | Pio. | <i>Pius.</i> |
| Gregorio. | <i>Gregory.</i> | Remigio. | <i>Remigius.</i> |
| Guillermo. | <i>William.</i> | Teresa. | <i>Theresa.</i> |
| Enrique. | <i>Henry.</i> | Tomás. | <i>Thomas.</i> |
| Gerónimo. | <i>Jerome.</i> | | |

| | | | |
|--------------------|------------------------|------------------|---------------------------------|
| Un hombre. | <i>A man.</i> | Una doncella. | <i>A maid.</i> |
| Una mujer. | <i>A woman.</i> | Un mozo. | <i>A lad.</i> |
| Un viejo, anciano. | <i>An old man.</i> | Un niño. | <i>A male child.</i> |
| Una vieja. | <i>An old woman.</i> | Un niño de teta. | <i>An infant at the breast.</i> |
| Un muchacho. | <i>A boy.</i> | Un huérfano. | <i>A male orphan.</i> |
| Un jóven. | <i>A young man.</i> | Un ciego. | <i>A blind man.</i> |
| Una muchacha. | <i>A girl.</i> | Un tuerto. | <i>A one-eyed man.</i> |
| La juventud. | <i>A youth.</i> | Un vizco. | <i>A squint-eyed man.</i> |
| La vejez. | <i>Old age.</i> | Un sordo. | <i>A deaf man.</i> |
| Un anciano. | <i>An elderly man.</i> | | |
| Un soltero. | <i>A bachelor.</i> | | |

| | | | |
|----------------|--------------------|---------------|-----------------------|
| Un mudo. | <i>A dumb man.</i> | Un jorobado. | <i>A crooked man.</i> |
| Un cojo. | <i>A lame man.</i> | Un gloton. | <i>A glutton.</i> |
| Un estropeado. | <i>A cripple.</i> | Un borrachon. | <i>A drunkard.</i> |

Of the human body.

| | | | |
|---------------------------|--------------------------|------------------------|-----------------------------|
| El cuerpo. | <i>The body.</i> | El brazo. | <i>The arm.</i> |
| Los cinco sentidos. | <i>The five senses.</i> | El codo. | <i>The elbow.</i> |
| La vista. | <i>Sight.</i> | La muñeca. | <i>The wrist.</i> |
| El oído. | <i>Hearing.</i> | El puño. | <i>The fist.</i> |
| Olfato. | <i>Smelling.</i> | La mano. | <i>The hand.</i> |
| El gusto. | <i>Tasting.</i> | La derecha. | <i>The right hand.</i> |
| El tacto. | <i>Feeling.</i> | La izquierda. | <i>The left hand.</i> |
| Un miembro. | <i>A member or limb.</i> | Los dedos. | <i>The fingers.</i> |
| La cabeza. | <i>The head.</i> | Las uñas. | <i>The nails.</i> |
| El pelo. | <i>The hair.</i> | Los dedos de los piés. | <i>The toes.</i> |
| Las barbas. | <i>The beard.</i> | Un pié. | <i>A foot.</i> |
| La barba. | <i>The chin.</i> | El pecho. | <i>The breast.</i> |
| El rostro. | <i>The face.</i> | Las costillas. | <i>The ribs.</i> |
| La frente. | <i>The forehead.</i> | El costado. | <i>The side.</i> |
| Las sienes. | <i>The temples.</i> | El vientre. | <i>The belly.</i> |
| Los ojos. | <i>The eyes.</i> | Las espaldas. | <i>The back.</i> |
| La niña del ojo. | <i>The eyeball.</i> | Los riñones. | <i>The reins.</i> |
| El párpado. | <i>The eyelid.</i> | El muslo. | <i>The thigh.</i> |
| La ceja. | <i>The eyebrow.</i> | La rodilla. | <i>The knee.</i> |
| Una pestaña. | <i>An eyelash.</i> | La pierna. | <i>The leg.</i> |
| La mejilla. | <i>The cheek.</i> | La pantorrilla. | <i>The calf of the leg.</i> |
| La oreja. | <i>The ear.</i> | La corva. | <i>The ham.</i> |
| La nariz. | <i>The nose.</i> | Los tobillos. | <i>The ancles.</i> |
| Las ventanas de la nariz. | <i>The nostrils.</i> | El talon. | <i>The heel.</i> |
| La boca. | <i>The mouth.</i> | La piel. | <i>The skin.</i> |
| Los labios. | <i>The lips.</i> | La carne. | <i>The flesh.</i> |
| La quijada. | <i>The jaw.</i> | Un hueso. | <i>A bone.</i> |
| Las encías. | <i>The gums.</i> | El cerebro. | <i>The brain.</i> |
| Los dientes. | <i>The teeth.</i> | Los sesos. | <i>The brains.</i> |
| Un diente. | <i>A tooth.</i> | El corazón. | <i>The heart.</i> |
| Una muela. | <i>A back tooth.</i> | Los pulmones. | <i>The lungs.</i> |
| La lengua. | <i>The tongue.</i> | El hígado. | <i>The liver.</i> |
| El paladar. | <i>The palate.</i> | Las tripas. | <i>The bowels.</i> |
| El cuello. | <i>The neck.</i> | La sangre. | <i>The blood.</i> |
| El seno. | <i>The bosom.</i> | Una vena. | <i>A vein.</i> |
| La garganta. | <i>The throat.</i> | Un nervio. | <i>A nerve.</i> |
| Los hombros. | <i>The shoulders.</i> | Una arteria. | <i>An artery.</i> |

| | | | |
|-----------------------|--------------------------------|---------------------|-----------------------------|
| El estómago. | <i>A stomach.</i> | Las viruelas. | <i>The small-pox.</i> |
| La boca del estómago. | <i>The pit of the stomach.</i> | Un mal de garganta. | <i>A sore throat.</i> |
| El dedo pulgar. | <i>The thumb.</i> | Mal de ojos. | <i>Sore eyes.</i> |
| Las coyunturas. | <i>The joints.</i> | Las lágrimas. | <i>The tears.</i> |
| El mal de cabeza. | <i>The head-ache.</i> | Saliva. | <i>Saliva.</i> |
| El mal de muelas. | <i>The tooth-ache.</i> | Moco. | <i>Mucus (of the nose).</i> |
| La fiebre. | <i>The fever.</i> | Gargajo. | <i>Spittle.</i> |
| Un constipado. | <i>A cold.</i> | Tuétano. | <i>Marrow.</i> |
| La tos. | <i>The cough.</i> | | |

Of the Universe in general.

| | | | |
|--------------------|-------------------------------|-----------------|------------------------------|
| El universo. | <i>The universe.</i> | El arco iris. | <i>The rainbow.</i> |
| El mundo. | <i>The world.</i> | Un aguacero. | <i>A shower.</i> |
| El sol. | <i>The sun.</i> | La nieve. | <i>Snow.</i> |
| Los rayos del sol. | <i>The sun-beams.</i> | El granizo. | <i>Hail.</i> |
| Las estrellas. | <i>The stars.</i> | Una helada. | <i>A frost.</i> |
| El firmamento. | <i>The sky, or firmament.</i> | Una escarcha. | <i>A hoar frost.</i> |
| Los elementos. | <i>The elements.</i> | El sereno. | <i>The evening dew.</i> |
| Un planeta. | <i>A planet.</i> | El rocío. | <i>The morning dew.</i> |
| Un cometa. | <i>A comet.</i> | El calor. | <i>The heat.</i> |
| Una constelacion. | <i>A constellation.</i> | El hielo. | <i>The ice.</i> |
| La luna. | <i>The moon.</i> | El deshielo. | <i>The thaw.</i> |
| Claro de luna. | <i>Moonlight.</i> | La humedad. | <i>The dampness.</i> |
| Luna nueva. | <i>New moon.</i> | Una nube. | <i>A cloud.</i> |
| Luna llena. | <i>Full moon.</i> | Una borrasca. | <i>A storm.</i> |
| Luna creciente. | <i>First quarter.</i> | Una tempestad. | <i>A tempest.</i> |
| Luna menguante. | <i>Last quarter.</i> | El trueno. | <i>A clap of thunder.</i> |
| Un eclipse. | <i>An eclipse.</i> | Los truenos. | <i>The thunder.</i> |
| El oriente. | <i>The east.</i> | Los relámpagos. | <i>The lightning.</i> |
| El occidente. | <i>The west.</i> | Un relámpago. | <i>A flash of lightning.</i> |
| El norte. | <i>The north.</i> | Un rayo. | <i>A thunderbolt.</i> |
| El sur. | <i>The south.</i> | Un terremoto. | <i>An earthquake.</i> |
| La luz. | <i>The light.</i> | El viento. | <i>The wind.</i> |
| Las tinieblas. | <i>Darkness.</i> | Un torbellino. | <i>A whirlwind.</i> |
| La sombra. | <i>Shadow.</i> | El globo. | <i>The globe.</i> |
| El aire. | <i>The air.</i> | Una esfera. | <i>A sphere.</i> |
| El tiempo. | <i>The weather.</i> | Un hemisferio. | <i>A hemisphere.</i> |
| El frio. | <i>The cold.</i> | El horizonte. | <i>The horizon.</i> |
| La sequedad. | <i>The dryness.</i> | Un grado. | <i>A degree.</i> |
| Una niebla. | <i>A fog.</i> | La longitud. | <i>The longitude.</i> |
| Una neblina. | <i>A mist.</i> | La latitud. | <i>The latitude.</i> |
| La lluvia. | <i>The rain.</i> | | |

| | | | |
|-------------------------|-----------------------------|-----------------|---------------------|
| Los vientos cardinales. | <i>The cardinal points.</i> | Un collado. | <i>A hill.</i> |
| Un clima. | <i>A climate.</i> | Un abismo. | <i>An abyss.</i> |
| Una region. | <i>A region.</i> | Un desierto. | <i>A desert.</i> |
| Un continente. | <i>A continent.</i> | Una llanura. | <i>A plain.</i> |
| Una isla. | <i>An island.</i> | Un puente. | <i>A bridge.</i> |
| Una península. | <i>A peninsula.</i> | Una calzada. | <i>A causeway.</i> |
| Un istmo. | <i>An isthmus.</i> | Una piedra. | <i>A stone.</i> |
| Un cabo. | <i>A cape.</i> | Una peña. | <i>A rock.</i> |
| Un promontorio. | <i>A promontory.</i> | La ribera. | <i>The shore.</i> |
| Un imperio. | <i>An empire.</i> | La costa. | <i>The coast.</i> |
| Un reino. | <i>A kingdom.</i> | Un vado. | <i>A ford.</i> |
| Una república. | <i>A republic.</i> | El camino real. | <i>The highway.</i> |
| Una colonia. | <i>A colony.</i> | Una senda. | <i>A path.</i> |
| Un país. | <i>A country.</i> | Un foso. | <i>A ditch.</i> |
| Una provincia. | <i>A province.</i> | Arena. | <i>Sand.</i> |
| Un condado. | <i>A shire, county.</i> | Polvo. | <i>Dust.</i> |
| Una montaña. | <i>A mountain.</i> | Cascajo. | <i>Gravel.</i> |
| Un monte. | <i>A mount.</i> | Barro. | <i>Clay.</i> |
| Un valle. | <i>A valley.</i> | Cieno. | <i>Mire.</i> |
| Una cuesta. | <i>An acclivity.</i> | Lodo. | <i>Mud.</i> |

The different Degrees of kindred.

| | | | |
|----------------|--------------------------|----------------|---------------------------|
| Un abuelo. | <i>A grand-father.</i> | Una suegra. | <i>A mother-in-law.</i> |
| Un padre. | <i>A father.</i> | Un yerno. | <i>A son-in-law.</i> |
| Un hijo. | <i>A son.</i> | Una nuera. | <i>A daughter-in-law.</i> |
| Un nieto. | <i>A grandson.</i> | Un cuñado. | <i>A brother-in-law.</i> |
| Un hermano. | <i>A brother.</i> | Una cuñada. | <i>A sister-in-law.</i> |
| Una hermana. | <i>A sister.</i> | Un padrastro. | <i>A stepfather.</i> |
| Un primo. | <i>A cousin.</i> | Una madrastra. | <i>A stepmother.</i> |
| Primo hermano. | <i>First cousin.</i> | Padrino. | <i>God-father.</i> |
| Un tío. | <i>An uncle.</i> | Madrina. | <i>God-mother.</i> |
| Un sobrino. | <i>A nephew.</i> | Ahijado. | <i>God-son.</i> |
| Una abuela. | <i>A grand-mother.</i> | Ahijada. | <i>God-daughter.</i> |
| Una madre. | <i>A mother.</i> | Un pariente. | <i>A relation.</i> |
| Una hija. | <i>A daughter.</i> | Un viudo. | <i>A widower.</i> |
| Una nieta. | <i>A grand-daughter.</i> | Una viuda. | <i>A widow.</i> |
| Una tía. | <i>An aunt.</i> | Un espósito. | <i>A foundling.</i> |
| Una sobrina. | <i>A niece.</i> | Un heredero. | <i>An heir.</i> |
| Un marido. | <i>A husband.</i> | Una heredera. | <i>An heiress.</i> |
| Una muger. | <i>A wife.</i> | El mayorazgo. | <i>The heir-at-law.</i> |
| Un suegro. | <i>A father-in-law.</i> | | |

Of water.

| | | | |
|------------------|---------------------------|---------------|---------------------|
| El océano. | <i>The ocean.</i> | Las ondas. | <i>The waves.</i> |
| El mar. | <i>The sea.</i> | Las olas. | <i>The billows.</i> |
| Un brazo de mar. | <i>An arm of the sea.</i> | Un puerto. | <i>A harbour.</i> |
| Un golfo. | <i>A gulf.</i> | Un lago. | <i>A lake.</i> |
| Una bahía. | <i>A bay.</i> | Un estanque. | <i>A pond.</i> |
| Un canal. | <i>A channel.</i> | Un pantano. | <i>A marsh.</i> |
| Un estrecho. | <i>A strait.</i> | Una fuente. | <i>A fountain.</i> |
| La marea. | <i>The tide.</i> | Un manantial. | <i>A spring.</i> |
| Pleamar. | <i>High water.</i> | Un pozo. | <i>A well.</i> |
| Bajamar. | <i>Low water.</i> | Un río. | <i>A river.</i> |
| La corriente. | <i>The stream.</i> | Un arroyo. | <i>A brook.</i> |
| La orilla. | <i>The bank.</i> | | |

Of Fire.

| | | | |
|--------------|--------------------|--------------|---------------------|
| El fuego. | <i>The fire.</i> | El rescoldo. | <i>Embers.</i> |
| La llama. | <i>The blaze.</i> | El hollín. | <i>Soot.</i> |
| Una chispa. | <i>A spark.</i> | Un tizon. | <i>A firebrand.</i> |
| El humo. | <i>The smoke.</i> | Un cohete. | <i>A rocket.</i> |
| Brasas. | <i>Live coals.</i> | Una hoguera. | <i>A bonfire.</i> |
| Las cenizas. | <i>Ashes.</i> | | |

Of Time.

| | | | |
|-------------------|--------------------------|--------------------|----------------------------------|
| La eternidad. | <i>Eternity.</i> | Antes de ayer. | <i>The day before yesterday.</i> |
| El tiempo. | <i>Time.</i> | Mañana. | <i>To-morrow.</i> |
| El día. | <i>The day.</i> | Pasado mañana. | <i>The day after to-morrow.</i> |
| Una semana. | <i>A week.</i> | El día siguiente. | <i>The next day.</i> |
| Un mes. | <i>A month.</i> | Un minuto. | <i>A minute.</i> |
| Un año. | <i>A year.</i> | Un segundo. | <i>A second.</i> |
| El amanecer. | <i>The break of day.</i> | Una hora. | <i>An hour.</i> |
| El alba. | <i>The dawn.</i> | Media hora. | <i>Half an hour.</i> |
| La mañana. | <i>The morning.</i> | Un cuarto de hora. | <i>A quarter of an hour.</i> |
| Mediodía. | <i>Noon.</i> | Un siglo. | <i>An age (a century).</i> |
| Tarde. | <i>Afternoon.</i> | Un año. | <i>A year.</i> |
| Noche. | <i>Evening, night.</i> | La una. | <i>One o'clock.</i> |
| Media noche. | <i>Midnight.</i> | Las dos. | <i>Two o'clock.</i> |
| Un día de fiesta. | <i>A holiday.</i> | | |
| Las vacaciones. | <i>The holidays.</i> | | |
| Un día de labor. | <i>A work-day.</i> | | |
| Hoy. | <i>To day.</i> | | |
| Ayer. | <i>Yesterday.</i> | | |

| | | | |
|--------------------------|--|---------------|----------------------------|
| Las tres y media. | <i>Half-past three.</i> | Julio. | <i>July.</i> |
| Las cuatro menos cuarto. | <i>A quarter to four.</i> | Agosto. | <i>August.</i> |
| Una fecha. | <i>A date.</i> | Setiembre. | <i>September.</i> |
| Un trimestre. | <i>A quarter of a year (three months).</i> | Octubre. | <i>October.</i> |
| La primavera. | <i>Spring.</i> | Noviembre. | <i>November.</i> |
| El verano. | <i>Summer.</i> | Diciembre. | <i>December.</i> |
| El otoño. | <i>Autumn.</i> | Quince días. | <i>A fortnight.</i> |
| El invierno. | <i>Winter.</i> | Ocho días. | <i>Eight days, a week.</i> |
| Las estaciones. | <i>The seasons.</i> | Lunes. | <i>Monday.</i> |
| La vispera. | <i>The eve.</i> | Martes. | <i>Tuesday.</i> |
| Enero. | <i>January.</i> | Miércoles. | <i>Wednesday.</i> |
| Febrero. | <i>February.</i> | Juéves. | <i>Thursday.</i> |
| Marzo. | <i>March.</i> | Viernes. | <i>Friday.</i> |
| Abril. | <i>April.</i> | Sábado. | <i>Saturday.</i> |
| Mayo. | <i>Mai.</i> | Domingo. | <i>Sunday.</i> |
| Junio. | <i>June.</i> | El principio. | <i>The beginning.</i> |
| | | El medio. | <i>The middle.</i> |
| | | El fin. | <i>The end.</i> |

Of the Soul.

| | | | |
|-------------------|-------------------------------|------------------|-----------------------|
| El alma. | <i>The soul.</i> | Cólera. | <i>Anger.</i> |
| La memoria. | <i>The memory.</i> | El conocimiento. | <i>Knowledge.</i> |
| La voluntad. | <i>The will.</i> | La razon. | <i>Reason.</i> |
| El entendimiento. | <i>The understanding.</i> | La inteligencia. | <i>The intellect.</i> |
| Deseo. | <i>Desire.</i> | La imaginacion. | <i>Imagination.</i> |
| Odio. | <i>Hatred.</i> | El génio. | <i>The génius.</i> |
| Pesadumbre. | <i>Grief.</i> | Estupidez. | <i>Stupidity.</i> |
| Amor. | <i>Love.</i> | Locura. | <i>Folly.</i> |
| Esperanza. | <i>Hope.</i> | Vergüenza. | <i>Shame.</i> |
| Celos. | <i>Jealousy.</i> | Error. | <i>Error.</i> |
| El gozo. | <i>Joy.</i> | Sabiduría. | <i>Wisdom.</i> |
| La soberbia. | <i>Pride.</i> | Temor. | <i>Fear.</i> |
| Vanidad. | <i>Vanity.</i> | Paz. | <i>Peace.</i> |
| Aborrecimiento. | <i>Horror.</i> | Viveza. | <i>Vivacity.</i> |
| Tristeza. | <i>Sadness.</i> | Sospecha. | <i>Suspicion.</i> |
| Placer. | <i>Pleasure.</i> | Piedad. | <i>Pity.</i> |
| Disgusto. | <i>Displeasure (disgust).</i> | Duda. | <i>Doubt.</i> |
| | | Valor. | <i>Courage.</i> |
| | | Atrevimiento. | <i>Boldness.</i> |

Of Virtues and Vices.

| | | | |
|------------------|--------------------------|-------------------|--|
| La virtud. | <i>Virtue.</i> | La malicia. | <i>Malice.</i> |
| El vicio. | <i>Vice.</i> | La astucia. | <i>Cunning.</i> |
| Un defecto. | <i>A defect.</i> | La envidia. | <i>Envy.</i> |
| Un imperfeccion. | <i>An imperfection.</i> | La lascivia. | <i>Lust.</i> |
| Buenas prendas. | <i>Good qualities.</i> | La codicia. | <i>Covetousness.</i> |
| Malas prendas. | <i>Bad qualities.</i> | El adulterio. | <i>Adultery.</i> |
| La justicia. | <i>Justice.</i> | Una mentira. | <i>A lie.</i> |
| La fé. | <i>Faith.</i> | La prodigalidad. | <i>Prodigality.</i> |
| La esperanza. | <i>Hope.</i> | La avaricia. | <i>Avarice.</i> |
| La caridad. | <i>Charity.</i> | La ociosidad. | <i>Idleness.</i> |
| La prudencia. | <i>Prudence.</i> | La holgazanería. | <i>Slothfulness.</i> |
| La bondad. | <i>Bounty, goodness.</i> | La inconstancia. | <i>Inconstancy.</i> |
| La pureza. | <i>Purity.</i> | El descuido. | <i>Indolence, care- lessness.</i> |
| La castidad. | <i>Chastity.</i> | La pereza. | <i>Laziness.</i> |
| La generosidad. | <i>Generosity.</i> | La porfia. | <i>Importunity.</i> |
| La frugalidad. | <i>Frugality.</i> | La maldad. | <i>Wickedness.</i> |
| La modestia. | <i>Modesty.</i> | La soberbia. | <i>Pride.</i> |
| La liberalidad. | <i>Liberality.</i> | La cobardía. | <i>Cowardice.</i> |
| La verdad. | <i>Truth.</i> | La desesperacion. | <i>Despair.</i> |
| La industria. | <i>Industry.</i> | La borrachera. | <i>Drunkedness (in- toxication).</i> |
| La economía. | <i>Economy.</i> | La lujuria. | <i>Luxury.</i> |
| La paciencia. | <i>Patience.</i> | La ambicion. | <i>Ambition.</i> |
| La constancia. | <i>Constancy.</i> | El egoismo. | <i>Selfishness.</i> |
| La clemencia. | <i>Clemency.</i> | El robo, hurto. | <i>Theft, robbery.</i> |
| La honestidad. | <i>Honesty.</i> | Una alevosía. | <i>Treachery.</i> |
| La docilidad. | <i>Docility.</i> | La perfidia. | <i>Perfidy.</i> |
| La amistad. | <i>Friendship.</i> | | |
| La fidelidad. | <i>Fidelity.</i> | | |
| La cortesía. | <i>Politeness.</i> | | |

Of vicious persons.

| | | | |
|---------------|----------------------------------|---------------|---|
| Un pícaro. | <i>A rogue.</i> | Un brujo. | <i>A sorcerer.</i> |
| Un travieso. | <i>A naughty (man, boy).</i> | Una bruja. | <i>A witch.</i> |
| Un libertino. | <i>A libertine.</i> | Un holgazan. | <i>An idler.</i> |
| Trampista. | <i>Cheat.</i> | Un vagamundo. | <i>A good for noth- ing fellow.</i> |
| Un embustero. | <i>Liar, story-teller.</i> | Un goloso. | <i>A glutton.</i> |
| Un ladron. | <i>A thief.</i> | Un tahir. | <i>A gambler.</i> |
| Un estafador. | <i>An impostor.</i> | Un hipócrita. | <i>A hypocrite.</i> |
| Un alcahuete. | <i>A pimp, a bawd.</i> | | |

Of Sciences and Arts.

| | | | |
|----------------------|-----------------------------|-----------------|------------------------------|
| La ciencia. | <i>Science.</i> | La pintura. | <i>Painting.</i> |
| El arte. | <i>Art.</i> | La geografía. | <i>Geography.</i> |
| Las artes liberales. | <i>The liberal arts.</i> | La escultura. | <i>Sculpture.</i> |
| Las artes mecánicas. | <i>The mechanical arts.</i> | La esgrima. | <i>Fencing.</i> |
| La gramática. | <i>The grammar.</i> | El baile. | <i>Dancing.</i> |
| La retórica. | <i>Rhetoric.</i> | La música. | <i>Music.</i> |
| La teología. | <i>Divinity.</i> | La escritura. | <i>Writing.</i> |
| La filosofía. | <i>Philosophy.</i> | Un gramático. | <i>A grammarian.</i> |
| La física. | <i>Physic.</i> | Un retórico. | <i>A rhetorician.</i> |
| La medicina. | <i>Physic (medicine).</i> | Un filósofo. | <i>A philosopher.</i> |
| La moral. | <i>Ethics.</i> | Un médico. | <i>A physician (doctor).</i> |
| Cirujía. | <i>Surgery.</i> | Un cirujano. | <i>A surgeon.</i> |
| Derecho. | <i>Law.</i> | Un poeta. | <i>A poet.</i> |
| Jurisprudencia. | <i>Jurisprudence.</i> | Un historiador. | <i>A historian.</i> |
| La poesía. | <i>Poetry.</i> | Un autor. | <i>An author.</i> |
| La historia. | <i>History.</i> | Un escritor. | <i>A writer.</i> |
| Las matemáticas. | <i>Mathematics.</i> | Un matemático. | <i>A mathematician.</i> |
| La aritmética. | <i>Arithmetic.</i> | Un arquitecto. | <i>An architect.</i> |
| La geometría. | <i>Geometry.</i> | Un astrólogo. | <i>An astrologer.</i> |
| La álgebra. | <i>Algebra.</i> | Un ingeniero. | <i>An engineer.</i> |
| La arquitectura. | <i>Architecture.</i> | Un pintor. | <i>A painter.</i> |
| La astrología. | <i>Astrology.</i> | Un escultor. | <i>A sculptor.</i> |
| La astronomía. | <i>Astronomy.</i> | Un impresor. | <i>A printer.</i> |
| La cronología. | <i>Chronology.</i> | Un músico. | <i>A musician.</i> |

Of the Study.

| | | | |
|----------------------|--------------------------|-----------------------|---------------------|
| La escuela. | <i>The school.</i> | Un cortaplumas. | <i>A penknife.</i> |
| El estudio. | <i>Study.</i> | Una pluma sin cortar. | <i>A quill.</i> |
| El catedrático. | <i>The professor.</i> | Una pluma cortada. | <i>A pen.</i> |
| Un libro. | <i>A book.</i> | Un pincel. | <i>A pencil.</i> |
| Papel. | <i>Paper.</i> | Cola de boca. | <i>Indian glue.</i> |
| Un pliego de papel. | <i>A sheet of paper.</i> | Tinta. | <i>Ink.</i> |
| Una mano de papel. | <i>A quire of paper.</i> | Tintero. | <i>Inkstand.</i> |
| Una resma. | <i>A ream.</i> | Una palabra. | <i>A word.</i> |
| Una hoja. | <i>A leaf.</i> | Un maestro. | <i>A master.</i> |
| Papel secante, teta. | <i>Blotting paper.</i> | Un discípulo. | <i>A pupil.</i> |
| Una página. | <i>A page.</i> | Una pizarra. | <i>A slate.</i> |
| Una línea. | <i>A line.</i> | Un sello. | <i>A seal.</i> |
| | | Obleas. | <i>Wafers.</i> |

| | | | |
|---------------|--------------------------------|-------------------------|-----------------------|
| Lacre. | <i>Sealing-wax.</i> | Un asunto. | <i>A subject.</i> |
| La salvadera. | <i>Sand-box.</i> | Una obra. | <i>A work.</i> |
| Cartera. | <i>Portfolio, pocket-book.</i> | Una traduccion. | <i>A translation.</i> |
| Una carta. | <i>A letter.</i> | Una frase. | <i>A sentence.</i> |
| Un periódico. | <i>A newspaper.</i> | Sello (para franquear). | <i>Stamp.</i> |
| La leccion. | <i>The lesson.</i> | Papel sellado. | <i>Stamps.</i> |

Of Dress.

| | | | |
|----------------------|-------------------------|-----------------------|---------------------------------|
| Un vestido. | <i>A suit.</i> | Un reloj de bolsillo. | <i>A watch.</i> |
| Una camisa. | <i>A shirt.</i> | Una tabaquera. | <i>A snuff-box.</i> |
| Una camisa de mujer. | <i>A shift.</i> | Un baston. | <i>A cane.</i> |
| Calzoncillos. | <i>Drawers.</i> | Un paraguas. | <i>An umbrella.</i> |
| Calzones. | <i>Breeches.</i> | Una bolsa. | <i>A purse.</i> |
| Medias. | <i>Stockings.</i> | Un anillo. | <i>A ring.</i> |
| Las ligas. | <i>Garters.</i> | Un espadin. | <i>A sword.</i> |
| Chinelas. | <i>Slippers.</i> | Los anteojos. | <i>The spectacles.</i> |
| Botas. | <i>Boots.</i> | Una basquiña. | <i>A black petticoat.</i> |
| Zapatos. | <i>Shoes.</i> | Unas enaguas. | <i>A white upper petticoat.</i> |
| Una casaca. | <i>A coat.</i> | El zagalejo. | <i>The under petticoat.</i> |
| Un chaleco. | <i>A waistcoat.</i> | Un tontillo. | <i>A hoop petticoat.</i> |
| Polainas. | <i>Leather gaiters.</i> | Un gorro. | <i>A plain cap.</i> |
| Botines. | <i>Cloth gaiters.</i> | Sombrero (de mujer). | <i>A bonnet.</i> |
| Corbatin. | <i>Stock.</i> | Una escofieta. | <i>A dress cap.</i> |
| Corbata. | <i>Cravat.</i> | La cotilla. | <i>The stays.</i> |
| Una corbata. | <i>A neckcloth.</i> | Un vestido de mujer. | } <i>A gown.</i> |
| Las mangas. | <i>The sleeves.</i> | Una bata. | |
| Los vuelos. | <i>The ruffles.</i> | Un delantal. | <i>An apron.</i> |
| Un bolsillo. | <i>A pocket.</i> | Un espejo. | <i>A looking-glass.</i> |
| Los botones. | <i>The buttons.</i> | Encaja. | <i>Lace.</i> |
| Los oiales. | <i>The buttonholes.</i> | Alfileres. | <i>Pins.</i> |
| El forro. | <i>The lining.</i> | Un acerico. | <i>A pin-cushion.</i> |
| El cuello. | <i>The collar.</i> | Los pendientes. | <i>Ear-rings.</i> |
| Una capa. | <i>A cloak.</i> | Los brazaletes. | <i>Bracelets.</i> |
| Una levita. | <i>A great-coat.</i> | Una sortija. | <i>A ring.</i> |
| Un sombrero. | <i>A hat.</i> | Un collar. | <i>A necklace.</i> |
| Una peluca. | <i>A wig.</i> | Una cinta. | <i>A riband.</i> |
| Un pañuelo. | <i>A handkerchief.</i> | Las alhajas. | <i>Jewels.</i> |
| Los guantes. | <i>The gloves.</i> | | |
| Un gorro ó gorra. | <i>A cap.</i> | | |
| Un manguito. | <i>A muff.</i> | | |
| Un peine. | <i>A comb.</i> | | |
| Una escobilla. | <i>A brush.</i> | | |

| | | | |
|--------------------------|---------------------------|-----------------|--------------------|
| Un aderezo de diamantes. | <i>A set of diamonds.</i> | Una espada. | <i>A sword.</i> |
| Un abanico. | <i>A fan.</i> | La ropa blanca. | <i>Linen.</i> |
| Un velo. | <i>A veil.</i> | La faltriguera. | <i>The pocket.</i> |
| Los chapines. | <i>Clogs.</i> | Espuelas. | <i>Spurs.</i> |
| Pelo postizo. | <i>False hair.</i> | Tirantes. | <i>Gallowases.</i> |
| Un capotillo. | <i>A mantle.</i> | Hebillas. | <i>Buckles.</i> |
| Un chal. | <i>A shawl.</i> | Un dedal. | <i>A die.</i> |
| Un quitasol. | <i>A parasol.</i> | La seda. | <i>Silk.</i> |
| | | El hilo. | <i>Thread.</i> |

Of Stuffs.

| | | | |
|-----------|-----------------------|-------------|------------------------------------|
| Paño. | <i>Cloth.</i> | Raso. | <i>Satin.</i> |
| Lienzo. | <i>Linen.</i> | Damasco. | <i>Damask.</i> |
| Muselina. | <i>Muslin.</i> | Bayeta. | <i>Baize.</i> |
| Batista. | <i>Cambric, lawn.</i> | Terciopelo. | <i>Velvet.</i> |
| Cotonía. | <i>Dimity.</i> | Sarga. | <i>Serge.</i> |
| Camelote. | <i>Camlet.</i> | Bombasi. | <i>Bombazeen.</i> |
| Felpa. | <i>Plush.</i> | Cordoban. | <i>Morocco or Spanish leather.</i> |
| Taftan. | <i>Taffeta.</i> | | |

Of a House.

| | | | |
|-------------------|--------------------------|-----------------------|---------------------------------|
| Una casa. | <i>A house.</i> | Un retrete. | <i>A closet.</i> |
| La puerta. | <i>The door.</i> | La despensa. | <i>The pantry.</i> |
| El cerrojo. | <i>The bolt.</i> | La bodega. | <i>The cellar.</i> |
| La cerraja. | <i>The lock.</i> | La cocina. | <i>The kitchen.</i> |
| La llave. | <i>The key.</i> | Una alacena. | <i>A cupboard.</i> |
| El cuarto bajo. | <i>The ground-floor.</i> | Un desvan. | <i>A garret.</i> |
| Un alto, un piso. | <i>A story.</i> | Un mirador. | <i>An observatory.</i> |
| El portal. | <i>The porch.</i> | El horno. | <i>The oven.</i> |
| El patio. | <i>The court.</i> | La cochera. | <i>The coach-house.</i> |
| Las escaleras. | <i>The stairs.</i> | La caballeriza. | <i>The stable.</i> |
| Un escalon. | <i>A step.</i> | Un jardin. | <i>A garden.</i> |
| Los corredores. | <i>The galleries.</i> | Un palomar. | <i>A pigeon-house.</i> |
| Un cuarto. | <i>An apartment.</i> | El tejado. | <i>The tiled roof.</i> |
| Un cuarto. | <i>A room.</i> | El lugar comun. | <i>The privy, water-closet.</i> |
| El comedor. | <i>The dining-room.</i> | La ventana. | <i>The window.</i> |
| Una sala. | <i>A parlour.</i> | Las puertas ventanas. | <i>The shutters.</i> |
| El estrado. | <i>The drawing-room.</i> | Una mesa. | <i>A table.</i> |
| La alcoba. | <i>The bed-room.</i> | Una alfombra. | <i>A carpet.</i> |
| Una antesala. | <i>The ante-chamber.</i> | Una silla. | <i>A chair.</i> |
| Un tocador. | <i>A dressing-room.</i> | Una cama. | <i>A bed.</i> |

| | | | |
|------------------------|--------------------------|-------------------------|---------------------------|
| Un armazon de cama. | <i>A bedstead.</i> | Un cajon. | <i>A table-drawer.</i> |
| Una almoadas. | <i>A pillow.</i> | Una gaveta. | <i>A bureau-drawer.</i> |
| Las sábanas. | <i>The sheets.</i> | Un reloj de sobre-mesa. | <i>A clock.</i> |
| Una manta. | <i>A blanket.</i> | Una escoba. | <i>A broom.</i> |
| Las cortinas. | <i>The curtains.</i> | Un asador. | <i>A spit.</i> |
| Un calentador. | <i>A warming-pan.</i> | Una cesta. | <i>A basket.</i> |
| Una vela. | <i>A candle.</i> | Un vaso. | <i>A glass.</i> |
| Un gergon. | <i>A mattress.</i> | Un jarro. | <i>A jug.</i> |
| Un colchon de lana. | <i>A flock-mattress.</i> | Una botella para agua. | <i>A decanter.</i> |
| Una funda de almohada. | <i>A pillow-case.</i> | Un cuchillo. | <i>A knife.</i> |
| La colcha. | <i>The counterpane.</i> | Un tenedor. | <i>A fork.</i> |
| Un candelero. | <i>A candlestick.</i> | Una cuchara. | <i>A spoon.</i> |
| Las despabiladeras. | <i>The snuffers.</i> | Un salero. | <i>A salt-cellar.</i> |
| La pala. | <i>The shovel.</i> | El mantel. | <i>The table-cloth.</i> |
| Las tenazas. | <i>The tongs.</i> | Una servilleta. | <i>A napkin.</i> |
| Leña. | <i>Wood.</i> | Un plato. | <i>A plate.</i> |
| Un escritorio. | <i>A writing-desk.</i> | La mostaza. | <i>Mustard.</i> |
| Un estante. | <i>A book-case.</i> | Un servicio de mesa. | <i>A table-service.</i> |
| Una papelera. | <i>A bureau.</i> | Un servicio de té. | <i>A tea-service.</i> |
| Un espejo. | <i>A mirror.</i> | La chocolatera. | <i>The chocolate-pot.</i> |
| Una araña de cristal. | <i>A lustre.</i> | La cafetera. | <i>The coffee-pot.</i> |
| El aparador. | <i>The sideboard.</i> | La tetera. | <i>The teapot.</i> |
| Una cómoda. | <i>A wardrobe.</i> | El molinillo. | <i>The mill.</i> |
| Un biombo. | <i>A screen.</i> | Una taza. | <i>A cup.</i> |
| Un baul. | <i>A trunk.</i> | Un platillo. | <i>A saucer.</i> |
| Un piano. | <i>A pianoforte.</i> | El jarro de la leche. | <i>The milk-pot.</i> |
| Una caja. | <i>A box.</i> | El azucarero. | <i>The sugar-basin.</i> |

Of Eatables, etc.

| | | | |
|---------------|----------------------|----------|-----------------|
| Pan. | <i>Bread.</i> | Vaca. | <i>Beef.</i> |
| Pan fresco. | <i>New bread.</i> | Carnero. | <i>Mutton.</i> |
| Pan duro. | <i>Stale bread.</i> | Ternera. | <i>Veal.</i> |
| Vino. | <i>Wine.</i> | Cordero. | <i>Lamb.</i> |
| Vino blanco. | <i>White wine.</i> | Jamon. | <i>Ham.</i> |
| Vino tinto. | <i>Red wine.</i> | Tocino. | <i>Bacon.</i> |
| Agua. | <i>Water.</i> | Caza. | <i>Game.</i> |
| Carne (viva). | <i>Flesh.</i> | Venado. | <i>Venison.</i> |
| Carne asada. | <i>Roasted meat.</i> | Pescado. | <i>Fish.</i> |
| Carne cocida. | <i>Boiled meat.</i> | Un pato. | <i>A duck.</i> |

| | | | |
|-----------------|---------------------|-------------------|---------------------|
| Un ganso. | <i>A goose.</i> | Naranjas. | <i>Oranges.</i> |
| Una gallina. | <i>A fowl.</i> | Manzanas. | <i>Apples.</i> |
| Un faisán. | <i>A pheasant.</i> | Melocotones. | <i>Peaches.</i> |
| Un pollo. | <i>A chicken.</i> | Nueces. | <i>Walnuts.</i> |
| Un pichón. | <i>A pigeon.</i> | Avellanas. | <i>Filberts.</i> |
| Un pavo. | <i>A turkey.</i> | Pasas. | <i>Raisins.</i> |
| Una perdiz. | <i>A partridge.</i> | Jaletinas. | <i>Jellies.</i> |
| Sal. | <i>Salt.</i> | Azúcar de pillón. | <i>Loaf sugar.</i> |
| Huevos. | <i>Eggs.</i> | Azúcar terciada. | <i>Moist sugar.</i> |
| Salsa. | <i>Sauce.</i> | | <i>Brown sugar.</i> |
| Los escabeches. | <i>Pickles.</i> | Tostadas. | <i>Toast.</i> |
| Las verduras. | <i>Vegetables.</i> | Manteca. | <i>Butter.</i> |
| Pimienta. | <i>Pepper.</i> | Cerveza. | <i>Beer.</i> |
| Vinagre. | <i>Vinegar.</i> | Aguardiente. | <i>Brandy.</i> |
| Aceite. | <i>Oil.</i> | Rom. | <i>Rum.</i> |
| Queso. | <i>Cheese.</i> | Sangría. | <i>Negus.</i> |
| Ensalada. | <i>Salad.</i> | Orchata. | <i>Orgeat.</i> |
| Peras. | <i>Pears.</i> | Limonada. | <i>Lemonade.</i> |
| Melones. | <i>Melons.</i> | Vino de Jerez. | <i>Sherry.</i> |
| Los postres. | <i>The dessert.</i> | Vino de Champa- | |
| Uvas. | <i>Grapes.</i> | ña. | <i>Champagne.</i> |
| Piñas. | <i>Pine-apples.</i> | | |

| | | | |
|----------------|---------------------------|----------------|--------------------------|
| Un oficio. | <i>An office.</i> | Un boticario. | <i>An apothecary.</i> |
| Un oficial. | <i>A workman.</i> | El confitero. | <i>The confectioner.</i> |
| Un artista. | <i>An artist.</i> | Un platero. | <i>A gold smith.</i> |
| Un aprendiz. | <i>An apprentice.</i> | Un mercader. | <i>A tradesman,</i> |
| Un sastre. | <i>A tailor.</i> | | <i>dealer.</i> |
| Un zapatero. | <i>A shoemaker.</i> | Un herbolario. | <i>A herbalist.</i> |
| Un zapatero de | | Un droguero. | <i>A druggist.</i> |
| viejo. | <i>A cobbler.</i> | Un ollero. | <i>A potter.</i> |
| Un sombrerero. | <i>A hatter.</i> | Un guantero. | <i>A glover.</i> |
| Un tintorero. | <i>A dyer.</i> | Un pescador. | <i>A fisherman.</i> |
| Un calderero. | <i>A brazier.</i> | Un pescadero. | <i>A fishmonger.</i> |
| Un herrero. | <i>A smith.</i> | Un cordelero. | <i>A rope-maker.</i> |
| Un cerrajero. | <i>A lock smith.</i> | Un tejedor. | <i>A weaver.</i> |
| Un estañador. | <i>A tinman.</i> | Un barbero. | <i>A barber.</i> |
| Un espadero. | <i>A sword-cutter.</i> | Un cocinero. | <i>A cook.</i> |
| Un carpintero. | <i>A carpenter, join-</i> | Un carnicero. | <i>A butcher.</i> |
| | <i>er.</i> | Un mesonero. | <i>An inn-keeper.</i> |
| Un sillero. | <i>A sadler.</i> | Un tabernero. | <i>A tavern-keeper.</i> |
| El albañil. | <i>The bricklayer.</i> | Un panadero. | <i>A baker.</i> |
| El cantero. | <i>The stone-cutter.</i> | Un pastelero. | <i>A pastrycook.</i> |
| El vidriero. | <i>The glazier.</i> | Un arriero. | <i>A muleteer.</i> |

| | | | |
|---------------|------------------------|----------------|------------------------|
| Un carretero. | <i>A carman.</i> | Un grabador. | <i>An engraver.</i> |
| Un herrador. | <i>A farrier.</i> | Un joyero. | <i>A jeweller.</i> |
| Un tornero. | <i>A turner.</i> | Un peluquero. | <i>A hair-dresser.</i> |
| Un armero. | <i>An armourer.</i> | Un pasamanero. | <i>A lace-maker.</i> |
| Un bordador. | <i>An embroiderer.</i> | Un librero. | <i>A bookseller.</i> |
| Un relojero. | <i>A watch-maker.</i> | Un cerero. | <i>A wax-chandler.</i> |

Of Weight.

| | | | |
|---------------|--------------------------------|-------------------|---------------------------------|
| Peso. | <i>Weight.</i> | Una toesa. | <i>A toise, a fathom.</i> |
| Un grano. | <i>A grain.</i> | Una vara. | <i>An ell.</i> |
| Una onza. | <i>An ounce.</i> | Una milla. | <i>A mile.</i> |
| Una libra. | <i>A pound.</i> | Una legua. | <i>A league.</i> |
| Un quintal. | <i>A hundredweight.</i> | Una moneda. | <i>A piece of money (coin).</i> |
| Una medida. | <i>A measure.</i> | Un penique. | <i>A penny.</i> |
| Un celemin. | <i>A peck.</i> | Un real. | <i>A rial.</i> |
| Una azumbre. | <i>A pint.</i> | Un cuarto. | <i>A farthing.</i> |
| Un tonel. | <i>A cask, a barrel.</i> | Un duro. | <i>A dollar.</i> |
| Una tonelada. | <i>A ton or tun.</i> | Una libra esterl. | <i>A pound (sterling).</i> |
| Una cuba. | <i>A cask (for wine), tub.</i> | Un franco. | <i>A franc.</i> |
| Una pulgada. | <i>An inch.</i> | Una guinea. | <i>A guinea.</i> |
| Un pié. | <i>A foot.</i> | | |
| Un paso. | <i>A pace.</i> | | |

Of towns, kingdoms etc.

| | | | |
|-----------------|--------------------------|-----------------|----------------------|
| Un estado. | <i>A state.</i> | Un obispado. | <i>A bishopric.</i> |
| Un reino. | <i>A kingdom.</i> | Una diócesis. | <i>A diocess.</i> |
| Un imperio. | <i>An empire.</i> | Una comarca. | <i>A territory.</i> |
| Una república. | <i>A republic.</i> | Undepartamento. | <i>A department.</i> |
| Un principado. | <i>A principality.</i> | La frontera. | <i>The frontier.</i> |
| Una provincia. | <i>A province.</i> | Una monarquía. | <i>A monarchy.</i> |
| Un ducado. | <i>A duchy.</i> | Un barrio. | <i>A district.</i> |
| Un condado. | <i>A county.</i> | El arrabal. | <i>The suburb.</i> |
| Un marquesado. | <i>A marquisate.</i> | Una ciudad. | <i>A town.</i> |
| Una baronía. | <i>A barony.</i> | Villa. | <i>Village.</i> |
| Un arzobispado. | <i>An archbishopric.</i> | Una aldea. | <i>A hamlet.</i> |

Army and Navy.

| | | | |
|-------------|-----------------------------------|-----------------------|------------------------------|
| Un militar. | <i>A soldier (adj. military).</i> | Un teniente general. | <i>A lieutenant-general.</i> |
| Un oficial. | <i>An officer.</i> | Un mariscal de campo. | <i>A major-general.</i> |
| Un general. | <i>A general.</i> | | |

| | | | |
|------------------|-------------------------------------|------------------------|--|
| Un brigadier. | <i>A brigadier.</i> | Un asalto. | <i>An assault.</i> |
| Un coronel. | <i>A colonel.</i> | La toma de una ciudad. | <i>The taking of a town.</i> |
| Un comandante. | <i>A commander.</i> | Saqueo. | <i>Pillage.</i> |
| Un mayor. | <i>A major.</i> | Una tregua. | <i>A truce.</i> |
| Un capitán. | <i>A captain.</i> | La paz. | <i>The peace.</i> |
| Un teniente. | <i>A lieutenant.</i> | Un recluta. | <i>A recruit.</i> |
| Un alférez. | <i>An ensign.</i> | Un rancho. | <i>A mess.</i> |
| Un sargento. | <i>A sergeant.</i> | Una maniobra. | <i>A manoeuvre.</i> |
| Estado mayor. | <i>Staff, generality.</i> | Una arma. | <i>An arm.</i> |
| Cabo. | <i>Corporal.</i> | Una arma de fuego. | <i>A fire-arm.</i> |
| El ejército. | <i>The army.</i> | Un fusil. | <i>A gun.</i> |
| La armada. | <i>The navy.</i> | Un cañon. | <i>A cannon.</i> |
| La caballería. | <i>The cavalry.</i> | Cureña. | <i>Gun-carriage.</i> |
| La infantería. | <i>The infantry.</i> | Bomba. | <i>Bomb.</i> |
| La artillería. | <i>The artillery.</i> | Un mortero. | <i>A mortar.</i> |
| Un escuadron. | <i>A squadron.</i> | La pólvora. | <i>Gun-powder.</i> |
| Un batallon. | <i>A battalion.</i> | Una bala. | <i>A ball.</i> |
| Un regimiento. | <i>A regiment.</i> | Una bala de cañon. | <i>A cannon-ball.</i> |
| Una compañía. | <i>A company.</i> | Una lanza. | <i>A lance.</i> |
| Un estandarte. | <i>A banner.</i> | Una alabarda. | <i>A halberd.</i> |
| Una bandera. | <i>A flag (colours).</i> | Una hacha. | <i>A battle-axe.</i> |
| Las filas. | <i>The lines.</i> | Un arco. | <i>An arch.</i> |
| Un campo. | <i>A camp.</i> | Una flecha. | <i>An arrow.</i> |
| Una tienda. | <i>A tent.</i> | Una espada. | <i>A sword.</i> |
| El cuartel. | <i>The quarter.</i> | Una hoja. | <i>A blade.</i> |
| Un destacamento. | <i>A detachment.</i> | La vaina. | <i>The sheath.</i> |
| La municion. | <i>The ammunition.</i> | El sable. | <i>The sabre, cutlass, broadsword.</i> |
| Un vivandero. | <i>A sutler.</i> | El puñal. | <i>The poniard.</i> |
| Un desfiladero. | <i>A defile.</i> | Una bayoneta. | <i>A bayonet.</i> |
| Una emboscada. | <i>An ambushade.</i> | Una coraza. | <i>A cuirass.</i> |
| Una escaramuza. | <i>A skirmish.</i> | Un casquete. | <i>A helmet.</i> |
| Un ataque. | <i>An attack.</i> | Un escudo. | <i>A shield.</i> |
| Una batalla. | <i>A battle.</i> | | |
| Un sitio. | <i>A siege.</i> | | |
| Una victoria. | <i>A victory.</i> | | |
| Una derrota. | <i>A defeat, rout (of an army).</i> | | |

Apéndice II.

De los Sinónimos.

The instances which I am about to give will serve to show the necessity of attending with care and strictness, to the exact import of words, if ever we would write with propriety or precision. Only a few instances:

Austerity; severity; rigour. Austerity relates to the manner of living; severity, of thinking; rigour, of punishing. To austerity is opposed effeminacy; to severity, relaxation; to rigour, clemency. A hermit is austere in his life; a casuist severe in his application of religion or law; a judge rigorous in his sentences.

Custom; habit. Custom, respects the action; habit, the actor. By custom we mean the frequent repetition of the same act; by habit, the effect which that repetition produces on the mind or body. By the custom of walking often in the streets, one acquires a habit of idleness.

Surprised; astonished; amazed; confounded. I am surprised with what is new or unexpected; I am astonished at what is vast or great; I am amazed at what is incomprehensible; I am confounded by what is shocking or terrible.

Desist, renounce, quit, leave off. Each of these words implies some pursuit or object relinquished; but from different motives. We desist from the difficulty of accomplishing; we renounce, on account of the disagreeableness of the object, or pursuit; we quit, for the sake of some other thing which interests us more, and we leave off, because we are weary of the design. A politician desists from his designs, when he

finds they are impracticable; he renounces the court, because he has been affronted by it; he quits ambition, for study or retirement; and he leaves off his attendance on the great, as he becomes old and weary of it.

Pride; vanity. Pride, makes us esteem ourselves; vanity makes us desire the esteem of others. It is just to say, as Dean Swift has done, that man is too proud to be vain.

Haughtiness; disdain. Haughtiness, is founded on the high opinion we entertain of ourselves; disdain on the low opinion we have of others.

To distinguish; to separate. We distinguish, what we want not to confound with another thing; we separate, what we want to remove from it. Objects are distinguished from one another by their qualities; they are separated by the distance of time or place.

To weary; to fatigue. The continuance of the same thing wearies us; labour fatigues us. I am weary with standing; I am fatigued with walking. A suitor wearies us by his perseverance; fatigues us by his importunity.

To abhor; to detest. Abhorrence imports simply strong dislike; detestation imports also strong disapprobation; one abhors being in debt; he detests treachery.

To invent; to discover. We invent things that are new; we discover what was before hidden. Galileo invented the telescope; Harvey discovered the circulation of the blood.

Only; alone. Only, imports that there is no other of the same kind; alone, imports being accompanied by no other. An only child, is one who has neither brother nor sister; a child alone, is one who is left by itself. There is a difference, therefore, in precise language, betwixt these two phrases, "Virtue alone makes us happy", imports that virtue by itself, or unaccompanied with other advantages, is sufficient to do it; "virtue only makes us happy", imports, that nothing else can do it.

Entire, complete. A thing is entire, by wanting none of its parts; complete, by wanting none of the appendages that belong to it. A man may have one entire house to himself, and yet not have one complete apartment.

Tranquillity; peace; calm. Tranquillity, respects a situation free from trouble, considered in itself; peace, the same situation with respect to any causes that might interrupt it; calm, with regard to a disturbed situation going before, or following it. A good man enjoys tranquillity in himself; peace with others, and calm, after the storm.

A difficulty; an obstacle. A difficulty embarrasses; an obstacle, stops us. We remove the one, we surmount the other. Generally, the first expresses somewhat arising from the nature and circumstances of the affair; the second somewhat arising from a foreign cause. Philip found difficulty in managing the Athenians from the nature of their dispositions; but the eloquence of Demosthenes was the greatest obstacle to his designs.

Wisdom; prudence. Wisdom leads us to speak and act what is most proper; prudence, prevents our speaking or acting improperly. A wise man employs the most proper means for success; a prudent man, the safest means for not being brought into danger.

Enough, sufficient. Enough, relates to the quantity which one wishes to have of any thing; sufficient relates to the use that is to be made of it. Hence enough generally imports a greater quantity than sufficient does. The covetous man never has enough, he has what is sufficient for nature.

To avow; to acknowledge; to confess. Each of these words imports the affirmation of a fact, but in very different circumstances. To avow, supposes the person to glory in it; to acknowledge supposes a small degree of faultiness which the acknowledgment compensates; to confess, supposes a higher degree of crime. A patriot avows his opposition to a bad minister, and is applauded; a gentleman acknowledges his mistake, and is forgiven; a prisoner confesses the crime he is accused of, and is punished.

To remark; to observe. We remark, in the way of attention, in order to remember; we observe, in the way of observation, in order to judge. A traveller remarks the most striking objects he sees; a general observes all the motions of his enemy.

Equivocal; ambiguous. An equivocal expression is one which has one sense open, and designed to be understood; another sense concealed, and understood only by the person who uses it. An ambiguous expression is, one which has apparently two senses, and leaves us at a loss which of them to give it. An equivocal expression is used with an intention to deceive an ambiguous one, when it is used with design, is, with an intention not to give full information. An honest man will never employ an equivocal expression; a confused man may often utter ambiguous ones, without any design.

With; by. Both these particles express the connexion between some instrument, or means of effecting an end and the agent who employs it; but *with* expresses a more close and immediate connection; *by* a more remote one. We kill a man *with* a sword; he dies *by* violence. The criminal is bound *with* ropes *by* the executioner.

To bury; to inter. To bury, implies the idea of hiding; to inter, that of placing under the ground with ceremony. The first may be used in an abstract meaning, as: to bury animosity.

Salary; wages; reward. Salary, imports the idea of a periodical payment to a person in employment; wages, a hire of service which receives a servant; reward, recompense as well as punishment.

New; novel. New, is opposed to old; novel, to known. The new year is opposed to the old year; but a novel style is one in which nobody has written, an unknown style.

Dumb; mute; speechless. Dumb, having been born without the faculty of speaking; mute, without sound, like the letters in certain words; speechless, who by accident cannot speak.

The first part of the paper discusses the general principles of the theory of the structure of the atom. It is shown that the structure of the atom is determined by the laws of quantum mechanics, and that the structure of the atom is determined by the laws of quantum mechanics. The second part of the paper discusses the structure of the atom in detail, and shows that the structure of the atom is determined by the laws of quantum mechanics. The third part of the paper discusses the structure of the atom in detail, and shows that the structure of the atom is determined by the laws of quantum mechanics. The fourth part of the paper discusses the structure of the atom in detail, and shows that the structure of the atom is determined by the laws of quantum mechanics. The fifth part of the paper discusses the structure of the atom in detail, and shows that the structure of the atom is determined by the laws of quantum mechanics. The sixth part of the paper discusses the structure of the atom in detail, and shows that the structure of the atom is determined by the laws of quantum mechanics. The seventh part of the paper discusses the structure of the atom in detail, and shows that the structure of the atom is determined by the laws of quantum mechanics. The eighth part of the paper discusses the structure of the atom in detail, and shows that the structure of the atom is determined by the laws of quantum mechanics. The ninth part of the paper discusses the structure of the atom in detail, and shows that the structure of the atom is determined by the laws of quantum mechanics. The tenth part of the paper discusses the structure of the atom in detail, and shows that the structure of the atom is determined by the laws of quantum mechanics.

ENGLISH GRAMMAR.

PART II.

ENGLISH GRAMMAR

PART II

ENGLISH GRAMMAR.

PART II.

English Grammar is the art of speaking and writing the English language with propriety.

It is divided into four parts; namely Orthography, Etymology, Syntax, and Prosody.

ORTHOGRAPHY.

Orthography teaches the nature and powers of letters, and the just method of spelling words.

A letter is the first principle of a word.

The letters of the English language are twenty-six in number.

These letters are the representatives of certain articulate sounds, the elements of the language.

An articulate sound is the sound of the human voice, formed by the organs of speech.

We have already seen in the Spanish-English part the alphabet and some general observations on the sounds of letters; we, therefore, treat but of *syllables* and *words* in general.

I. Of syllables, and the rules for arranging them.

A *syllable* is a sound, either simple or compound, pronounced by a single impulse of the voice, and constituting a word, or a part of a word: as, a, ant, an.

Spelling is the art of rightly dividing words into their syllables.

The following are the general rules for the division of words into syllables.

1. A single consonant between two vowels, must be joined to the latter syllable: as, de-light; re-source: except the letter x, as, ex-ist; and likewise words compounded; as, up-on; dis-ease.

2. Two consonants proper to begin a word, must not be separated; as, fa-ble. But when they come between two vowels, and are such as cannot begin a word, they must be divided; as, ut-most; in-most; un-der; cof-fin.

3. When three consonants meet in the middle of a word, if they can begin a word, and the preceding vowel be pronounced long, they are not to be separated; as, de-throne. But when the vowel of the preceding syllable is pronounced short, one of the consonants always belongs to that syllable, as, dis-tract; dis-prove.

4. When three or four consonants which are not proper to begin a syllable, meet between two vowels, such of them as can begin a syllable, belong to the latter, the rest to the former syllable, as ab-stain; hand-some; parch-ment.

5. Two vowels, not being a diphthong, must be divided into separate syllables, as, cru-el; so-ci-e-ty.

6. Compound words must be traced into the simple words of which they are composed; as, ice-house; never-the-less.

7. Grammatical, and other particular terminations, are generally separated: as, teach-est; teach-er; good-ness; false-hood.

II. Of words in general, and the rules for spelling them.

Words are articulate sounds, used by common consent, as signs of our ideas.

According to the syllable is a word termed a monosyllable, a dissyllable, a polysyllable.

All words are either primitive or derivative.

A primitive word is that which cannot be reduced to any simpler word in the language, as, man, good, bad.

A derivative word is that which may be reduced to another word in English of greater simplicity: as, manful, goodness.

The orthography of the English Language being attended with much uncertainty, the learner is presented with a view

of such general maxims in spelling primitive and derivative words, as have been almost universally received.

RULE I.—Monosyllables ending with any consonant but *f*, *l*, or *s* and preceded by a single vowel, never double the final consonant; excepting *add*, *ebb*, *butt*, *egg*, *odd*, *err*, *inn*, *bunn*, *purr* and *buzz*.

RULE II.—Monosyllables ending with *f*, *l*, or *s*, preceded by a single vowel, double the final consonant: *as*, *staff*, *mill*, *pass*. Exceptions are, *of*, *if*, *as*, *has*, *is*, *was*, *yes*, *his*, *this*, *us* and *thus*.

RULE III.—Words ending with *y*, preceded by a consonant, form the plurals of nouns, the persons of verbs, verbal nouns, past participles, comparatives, and superlatives, by changing *y* into *i*: *as*, *spy*, *spies*; *I carry*, *he carries*; *happy*, *happier*.

The present participle retains the *y*, that *i* may not be doubled; *as*, *carry*, *carrying*.

But *y*, preceded by a vowel, in such instances as the above, is not changed; *as*, *boy*, *boys*; except in *lay*, *pay* and *say* and their compounds in the imperfect and past participle.

RULE IV.—Monosyllables, and words accented on the last syllable, ending with a single consonant preceded by a single vowel, double that consonant, when they take another syllable beginning with a vowel, *as*, *wit*, *witty*; *begin*, *beginner*; *beg*, *beggest*.

RULE V.—Words ending with any double letter but *l*, and taking *ness*, *less*, *ly* or *ful*, after them, preserve the letter double; *as*, *harmlessness*, *carelessly*, *stiffly*, *successful*, etc. But those words which end with double *l* and take *ness*, *less*, *ly* or *ful* after them, generally omit one *l*; *as*, *fulness*, *skillless*, *fully*, *skilful* etc.

RULE VI.—*Ness*, *less*, *ly* and *ful* added to words with silent *e*, do not cut it off; *as*, *paleness*, *peaceful*; except in a few words; *as*, *duly*, *truly*, *awful*.

RULE VII.—*Able* and *ible*, when incorporated into words ending with silent *e*, almost always cut it off; *as*, *blame*, *blamable*; *sense*, *sensible* etc.; but if *c* or *g* soft comes before *e* in the original word, the *e* is then preserved in words compounded with *able*: *as*, *change*, *changeable*.

RULE VIII.—When *ing* or *ish* is added to words ending with silent *e*, the *e* is almost universally omitted: as, place, placing; love, loving; slave, slavish.

ETYMOLOGY.

Etymology treats of the different sorts of words, their various modifications and their derivation.

There are nine parts of Speech; namely, the *Article*, the *Noun*, the *Adjective*, the *Pronoun*, the *Verb*, the *Adverb*, the *Preposition*, the *Conjunction*, and the *Interjection*.

Of the Articles.

An article is a word put before a noun to show the extent of its meaning; as, *a* man, *the* woman.

There are but two articles in English, *a* or *an*, and *the*. *A* or *an* is styled the indefinite article: it is used in a vague sense; *a* before a consonant, *a* father; and *an* before a vowel or a silent *h*; as, an age; an hour.

The is called the definite article, because it points out what particular thing or things are meant; as, *the* son of the king.

The importance of the articles will be seen in the following examples: the son of the king, a son of the king, the son of a king.

The indefinite article can be joined to nouns in the singular number only; the definite article may be joined also to plurals.

The article is omitted before nouns that imply the different virtues, vices, passions, qualities, sciences, arts, metals, herbs, etc.; as, falsehood is odious; prudence is commendable.

Of Nouns.

A noun is the name of any person, place, or thing existing or of which we have any notion: as, John, Brighton, book, virtue.

Nouns are either *proper* or *common*, proper nouns are the names of places, persons, seas and rivers; as, Thames, England, Thomas; *common* nouns are the names of things in general; as, chair, book, table. *Collective* nouns are such as

signify many; e. g. crowd; *abstract* nouns are the names of qualities abstracted from their substantives; as, wisdom, wickedness. *Verbal* or *participial* nouns are nouns derived from verbs; as, reading, speaking, writing.

Nouns are varied by *Number*, *Gender*, and *Case*.

Of Number.

Number is the distinction of one from more.

Nouns have two numbers, the *Singular* and the *Plural*. The singular denotes one, the plural more than one.

Some nouns, from the nature of the things which they express, are used only in the singular form; as, wheat, gold, pride, sloth; others only in the plural form; as, bellows, scissors, riches.

1. The plural number is generally formed by adding *s* to the singular; as, book, books.

2. Nouns ending in *s*, *sh*, *ch*, *x*, and *o* form the plural by adding *es*; as, Miss, misses; bush, bushes; church, churches; fox, foxes; hero, heroes.

3. Nouns ending in *y* change *y* in *ies* in the plural; as Lady, ladies; *y*, with a vowel before it, is not changed; as, day, days.

4. Nouns in *f* or *fe* change *f* or *fe* into *ves* in the plural; as, life, lives. Exceptions to this rule see in the Spanish-English part.

Of Gender.

Gender is the distinction of nouns, with regard to sex.

There are three genders, the *masculine*, the *feminine* and the *neuter*.

The masculine gender denotes animals of the male kind; as, a man, a bull.

The feminine gender signifies animals of the female kind; as, a woman, a hen.

The neuter gender signifies objects which are neither males nor females; as, house, field.

Some substantives, naturally neuter, are, by a figure of speech, converted into the masculine or feminine gender; as, when we say of the sun, *he* is setting; and of a ship, *she* sails well.

Of Case.

Case is the relation one noun bears to another, or to a verb, or to a preposition.

Nouns have three cases; the Nominative, the Possessive, and the Objective.

The nominative and the objective are alike; the former simply expresses the name of a thing or the subject of a verb: as, the boy plays; the latter expresses the object of an action, or of a relation, and generally follows a verb active, or a preposition: as, I see the man.

The possessive case expresses the relation of property or possession, and is formed by adding an apostrophe and *s* to the nominative; as, John's; my father's purse. When the plural ends in *s*, the possessive case is formed by adding only an apostrophe; as, Ladies'; On eagles' wings.

Of Adjectives.

An adjective is a word which expresses the quality of a noun; as, a good boy; a virtuous woman.

In English, the adjective is not varied on account of *gender*, *number*, or *case*; as, a good boy; good girls.

Adjectives have three degrees of comparison; the *Positive*, the *Comparative*, and the *Superlative*.

The comparative is formed by adding *er* to the positive; and the superlative by adding *est*; as, sweet, sweeter, sweetest.

Dissyllables ending in *y*, if preceded by a consonant, change *y* into *i* before *er* and *est*; as, happy, happier, happiest; if *y* is preceded by a vowel, it does not change; as, gay, gayer, gayest.

Adjectives of one syllable are generally compared by adding *er* and *est*; and those of more than one by prefixing *more* and *most*; as, more numerous, most numerous; or by *less* and *least*; as, less merry, least merry.

Dissyllables ending with *e* final are often compared by *er* and *est*, as, polite, politer, politest.

Some adjectives do not properly admit of comparison, such as, true, perfect, universal, chief, extreme, etc.

When the positive ends in a single consonant, preceded by a single vowel, the consonant is doubled before *er* and *est*; as, big, bigger, biggest.—How much bigger is the earth than a grain of sand?

Of Pronouns.

A pronoun is a word used instead of a noun; as, John is a good boy; *he* obeys the master. There are three kinds of pronouns; *personal*, *relative* and *adjective* pronouns.

Of the Personal Pronouns.

There are five personal pronouns, viz. *I*, *thou*, *he*, *she*, *it*; with their plurals, *we*, *you*, (*ye*), *they*. They are thus declined.

| <i>Person.</i> | <i>Case.</i> | <i>Singular.</i> | <i>Plural.</i> |
|----------------|--------------------|------------------|----------------|
| <i>First.</i> | <i>Nom.</i> | I. | We. |
| | <i>Poss.</i> | Mine. | Ours. |
| | <i>Obj.</i> | Me. | Us. |
| <i>Second.</i> | <i>Nom.</i> | Thou. | Ye or you. |
| | <i>Poss.</i> | Thine. | Yours. |
| | <i>Obj.</i> | Thee. | You. |
| <i>Third.</i> | <i>Nom.</i> | He. | They. |
| | <i>Mas. Poss.</i> | His. | Theirs. |
| | | <i>Obj.</i> | Him. |
| <i>Third.</i> | <i>Nom.</i> | She. | They. |
| | <i>Fem. Poss.</i> | Hers. | Theirs. |
| | | <i>Obj.</i> | Her. |
| <i>Third.</i> | <i>Nom.</i> | It. | They. |
| | <i>Neut. Poss.</i> | Its. | Theirs. |
| | | <i>Obj.</i> | It. |

Of the Relative Pronouns.

A relative pronoun is a word that relates to a noun or pronoun before it, called the antecedent; as, the mother who taught us, etc.

The simple relatives are, *who*, *which* and *that*; they are alike in both numbers; *who* is declined thus.

| <i>Singular.</i> | <i>Plural.</i> |
|--------------------|----------------|
| <i>Nominative.</i> | Who. |
| <i>Possessive.</i> | Whose. |
| <i>Objective.</i> | Whom. |

Who is applied to persons; as, the boy *who* writes; and to inferior animals, when they are represented as speaking and acting like *rational beings* (personified).

Which is applied to inferior animals and things without life; as, the dog *which* barks.

That is often used instead of *who* or *which*; as, the boy *that* reads; the book *that* was lost.

What is a compound relative, including both the relative and the antecedent, mostly equivalent to *that which*, as, this is *what* I wanted.

Of the Adjective Pronouns.

There are four sorts of adjective Pronouns.

1. *The Possessive Pronouns*, *my*, *thy*, *his*, *her*, *our*, *your*, *their*, *its*, *own*. *His* and *her* are possessive pronouns when placed immediately before nouns. *Own* is added to possessives, both singular and plural: as, our *own* house; I live in my own house, that is, not in a hired house.

Mine and *thine* instead of *my* and *thy* were formerly used before a substantive or adjective beginning with a vowel, or a silent *h*, as, «Blot out all *mine* iniquities.»

2. *The distributive pronouns* which denote the persons or things that make up a number, as taken separately and singly. They are *each*, *every*, *either*, *neither*. *Each* of his brothers. *Every* man, etc.

3. The *demonstrative* are those which precisely point out the subjects to which they relate; they are *this* and *that* with their plurals *these* and *those*. *That* is sometimes a *relative*, sometimes a *demonstrative* pronoun, and sometimes a *conjunction*. *That* is relative when it can be turned into *who* or *which* without destroying the sense; as, «The days *that* (*which*) are past, are gone for ever.» It is a demonstrative pronoun when it is placed immediately before a noun, expressed or understood; as, *that* book is new; *that* is not the one I want.

That is a conjunction when it cannot be turned into *who* or *which*, but marks a consequence, an indication or final end; as: Live well *that* you may die well.

This refers to the nearest person or thing, and *that* to the most distant. *This* is better than *that*. *Former* and

latter may be properly ranked amongst the demonstrative pronouns.

4. The *Indefinite* express their subjects in a general manner, they are: *any, all, such, none, whole, some, both, one, other, another*, etc. The three last are declined like nouns, but *another* has no plural. *None* is used in both numbers, but cannot be joined to a noun.

Of Verbs.

A *Verb* is a word which expresses *being, doing or suffering*; as, I am; I love; I am loved.

Verbs are of three kinds: *active, passive, and neuter*.

A verb *active* expresses action passing from an actor to an object, for which reason active verbs are also called *transitive*; as, James strikes the dog.

A verb *passive* expresses the suffering of an action, or the enduring of what another does; as, the dog is struck.

A verb *neuter* expresses being, or a state of being, or action confined to the actor, wherefore called *intransitive*; as, he sleeps. Auxiliary or helping Verbs, are those by the help of which the English verbs are principally conjugated; they are, *do, be, have, shall, will*, with their variations; *let* and *must* which have no variations.

A verb is declined by *Voices, Moods, Tenses, Numbers* and *Persons*.

Of Number and Person.

Verbs have two numbers, the Singular and the Plural, and in each number there are three persons; as.

| | <i>Singular.</i> | <i>Plural.</i> |
|-----------------------|------------------|-----------------|
| <i>First Person.</i> | I love. | We love. |
| <i>Second Person.</i> | Thou lovest. | Ye or you love. |
| <i>Third Person.</i> | He loves. | They love. |

Of Moods.

Mood is a particular form of the verb showing the manner in which the being, action, or passion, is represented.

There are five moods of verbs; namely, the *Indicative*, the *Potential*, the *Subjunctive*, the *Imperative* and the *Infinitive*.

The Indicative Mood simply declares a thing; as, he loves; or asks a question; as, does he love me?

The Potential Mood implies possibility, liberty, power, will, or obligation; as, the wind may blow; you may go there; you should obey your Parents.

The Subjunctive Mood represents a thing under a condition, supposition, motive, wish, and is preceded by a conjunction, expressed or understood, and followed by another verb; as, If I were rich, I should do it. Were he good, he would be happy.

The Imperative Mood commands, entreats, exhorts or permits; as, do this; remember thy Creator; go in peace.

The Infinitive Mood expresses a thing in a general manner, without distinction of number or person, and commonly has *to* before it; as, to love; to speak.

Of Tenses.

Tense is the distinction of time; there are six tenses, viz. The *Present*, the *Perfect* and the *Future*, with their variations, the *Imperfect*, the *Pluperfect* and the *Second Future*.

The *Present tense* expresses what is going on just now, as, I love you. This tense is also used to express a *habit* or *custom*; as, he snuffs. It is sometimes applied to persons long since dead, when the narration of their actions excites our passions; as, Nero is abhorred for his cruelty; Milton is admired for his sublimity. In *historical* narration it is beautifully used for the Past tense; as, Cæsar leaves Gaul, crosses the Rubicon, and enters Italy with five thousand men.

When preceded by such words as, *when*, *before*, *as soon as*, *after*, it expresses the relative time of a future action; as, when he comes, he will be welcome.

In the *continue*, *progressive*, and *compound form*, it expresses an action *begun* and *going on just now*, but not complete; as, I am studying.

The *Past Tense or Imperfect* represents the action or event either as past and finished; as, he broke the bottle and spilt the water; or it represents the action as unfinished at a certain time past; as, my mother was coming home when I met her. It is likewise used when the action or state is limited by the *circumstance* of *time* or *place*; as, we saw him *yesterday*.

After *death* all agents are spoken of in the past tense, because time is limited by the life of the person; as, Mary Queen of Scots was remarkable for her beauty. This tense is peculiarly appropriated to the *narrative style*, because all narration implies some circumstance; as, Socrates refused to adore false gods; he was much admired; he did much good.—Such expressions as *sometimes, often, many a time, frequently*, etc. require, except in narrations, *the perfect*, because they do not limit the action to any definite portion of past time; as, How often have we seen the proud despised!

The Perfect Tense implies that an action has just now, or lately been quite finished; as, John has cut his finger. This tense chiefly denotes the accomplishment of mere facts without any necessary relation to *time* or *place*; as, Philosophers have endeavoured to investigate the origin of evil.—In general however it denotes:

1. An action newly finished; as, I have heard great news.
2. An action done in a definite space of time (such as hour, day, week, month, year etc.), a part of which has yet to *elapse*; as, I have spent this day well.
3. An action perfected some time ago, but whose consequences extend to the present time; as, We have neglected our duty, and are therefore unhappy.

Duration or *existence* requires the perfect; as, he has been dead four days.

The Pluperfect tense represents a thing as past before another event happened; as, all the judges had taken their places before Sir Roger came.

The Future represents the action as yet to come; as, I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoice.

The Future perfect intimates, that the action will be fully accomplished at or before the time of another future action or event; as, I shall have got my lesson *before* ten o'clock tomorrow.

Of Will and Shall.

1. *Will*, in the *first person singular* and *plural*, intimates *resolution* and *promising*; as, we will go; I will make of thee a great nation; I will not let thee go except thou bless me.

2. *Will* in the *second* and *third* person commonly *foretells*; as, he will reward the righteous; you will be happy there.

3. *Shall* in the first person only *foretells*; as, I shall go to-morrow.

In the second and third person *shall* *promises*, *commands* and *threatens*; as, they shall be rewarded; thou shalt not steal.

But this must be understood of affirmative sentences only; for when the sentence is interrogative, just the reverse commonly takes place; shall I send you a little of the pie? Will James return to-morrow?

Of *shall* it may be remarked, that it never expresses the will or resolution of its Nominative.

Should and *would* are subject to the same rules as *shall* and *will*; they are generally attended with a supposition; as, Were I to run, I should soon be fatigued.

Should is often used instead of *ought* to express *duty* or *obligation*; as, we should remember the poor; we ought to obey God rather than men.

Of Adverbs.

An *Adverb* is a word joined to a verb, an adjective, or another adverb to express some quality or circumstance of *time*, *place* or *manner* respecting it; as, William speaks *distinctly*; he is *remarkably* diligent and reads *very* correctly.

The principal adverbs: So, no, not, nay, yea, yes, too, well, up, very, forth, how, why, far, now, then, soon, much, here, there, where, when, whence, thence, still, more, most, little, less, least, thus, since, ever, never, while, whilst, once, twice, thrice, first, scarcely, quite, rather, again, ago, seldom, often, indeed, exceedingly, already, hither, thither, whither, doubtless, haply, perhaps, enough, daily, always, sometimes, almost, alone, peradventure, backward, forward, upward, downward, together, apart, asunder, viz., to and fro, in fine.

The generality of those words that end in *ly* are adverbs of *manner* or *quality*. They are formed from adjectives by adding *ly*, as, foolish, foolishly.

To-day, *yesterday*, and *to-morrow* are always nouns, for they are parts of time; as, yesterday is past, to-day is passing, and we may never see to-morrow. When these words answer

to the question *when*, they are governed by a preposition *understood*; as, Will James come home (on) to-morrow?

Much is used:—1. As an *adverb*; as, it is *much* better to give than to receive.

2. As an *adjective*; as, in *much* wisdom is *much* grief.

3. As a *noun*; as, where *much* is given, *much* is required.

Of Prepositions.

A *preposition* is a word put before nouns and pronouns, to show the relation between them; as, He sailed *from* Leith to London *in* two days.

A list of prepositions to be got accurately by heart: About, above, according to, across, after, against, along, amid, amidst, among, amongst, around, at, athwart. Bating, before, behind, below, beneath, besides, beside, between, betwixt, beyond, by. Concerning. Down, during. Except, excepting. For, from. In, into, instead of. Near, nigh. Of, off, on, over, out of. Regarding, respecting, round. Since. Through, throughout, till, to, touching, towards. Under, underneath, unto, up, upon. With, within, without.

Every preposition requires an objective case after it. When a preposition does not govern an objective case, it becomes an adverb; as, he rides about; he goes up.

Of Conjunctions.

A *conjunction* is a word which joins words and sentences together; as, You *and* I must go to Leith, *but* Peter may stay at home. The conjunctions are divided into two sorts, the *Copulative* and *Disjunctive*.

The conjunction copulative serves to connect or to continue a sentence, by expressing an addition, a supposition, a cause; as, he *and* I went there; you are happy, *because* you are good.—*The copulative conjunctions are*: also, and, because, both, for, if, since, that, then, therefore, wherefore.

The conjunction disjunctive serves to express opposition of meaning in different degrees: as, *Though* he was frequently reprov'd, *yet* he did not reform.

The disjunctive conjunctions are: Although, as, as well as, but, either, except, lest, neither, nor, notwithstanding, or, provided, so, than, though, unless, whether, yet.

But in some cases is an adverb, whenever it can be turned into *only*; we are but of yesterday and know nothing; and sometimes it is conjunction. *Since* also is sometimes adverb and sometimes preposition; as, *Since (conj.)* we must part, let us do it peaceably; I have not seen him since (*prep.*) that time; Our friendship commenced long since (*adverb*).

Of Interjections.

An *interjection* is a word which expresses some emotion of the speaker; as, Oh, what a sight is here! Well done!

They are: O! oh! ah! alas! alack! away! aha! begone! hark! ho! ha! he! hail! hum! hush! huzza! hist! hey day! lo! o strange! o brave! pshaw! see! behold! well-a-day! etc.

On Parsing.

TO BE TRANSLATED INTO SPANISH.

No. 1.

A few easy sentences chiefly intended as an exercise on the active Verb; but to be previously used as an Exercise on Nouns and Adjectives.

A good conscience and a contented mind will make a man happy. Philosophy teaches us to endure afflictions, but Christianity to enjoy them, by turning them into blessings. Virtue ennobles the mind, but vice debases it. Application in the early period of life, will give happiness and ease to succeeding years. A good conscience fears nothing. Devotion promotes and strengthens virtue, calms and regulates the temper, and fills the heart with gratitude and praise. If we lay no restraint upon our lusts, no control upon our appetites and passions, they will hurry us into guilt and misery. Discretion stamps a value upon all our other qualities; it instructs us to make use of them at proper times, and turn them honourably to our own advantage: it shows itself alike in all our words and actions, and serves as an unerring guide in every occurrence of life. Shame and disappointment attend sloth and idleness. Indolence undermines the foundation of every virtue, and unfits a man for the social duties of life.

No. 2.

Chiefly on Active Verbs.

Knowledge gives ease to solitude and gracefulness to retirement. Gentleness ought to form our address, to regulate our speech, and to diffuse itself over our whole behaviour. Knowledge makes our being pleasant to us, fills the mind with entertaining views, and administers to it a perpetual series of gratification. Meekness controls our angry passions; candour our severe judgments. Perseverance in labour will surmount every difficulty. He that takes pleasure in the prosperity of others, enjoys part of their good fortune. Restlessness of mind disqualifies us both for the enjoyment of our peace and the performance of our duty. Sadness contracts the mind; mirth dilates it. We should subject our fancies to the government of reason. Self-conceit, presumption and obstinacy blast the prospect of many a youth. A constant perseverance in the paths of virtue will gain respect. Envy and wrath shorten life; and anxiety brings age before its time. Bad habits require immediate reformation.

No. 3.

Chiefly on the Neuter Verb, including the Verb, *to be*.

Economy is no disgrace: it is better to live on a little than to outlive a great deal. A virtuous education is a better inheritance than a great estate. Good and wise men only can be real friends. Friendship can scarcely exist where virtue is not the foundation. He that swells in prosperity will shrink in adversity. To despair in adversity is madness. From idleness rises neither pleasure nor advantage: we must flee therefore from idleness, the certain parent of guilt and ruin. You must not always rely on promises. The peace of society depends on justice. The mail travels fast. He sleeps soundly; he lives soberly. Nothing appears to be so low and mean as lying and dissimulation. Vice is its own punishment, and virtue its own reward. Industry is the road to wealth, and virtue to happiness.

No. 4.

Virtue must be formed and supported by daily and repeated exertions. There is not a more pleasing exercise of

the mind than gratitude: it is accompanied with such an inward satisfaction, that the duty is sufficiently rewarded by the performance. The mind should be stored with knowledge, and cultivated with care. Old friends are preserved, and new ones are procured by a grateful disposition. Words are like arrows and should not be shot at random. I have long been taught that the afflictions of this life are overpaid by that eternal weight of glory, which awaits the virtuous. Great merit is often concealed under the most unpromising appearances. Some talents are buried in the earth and others are properly employed. Much mischief has often been prevented by timely consideration. King Alfred is said to have divided the day and night into three parts; eight hours were allotted for meals and sleep; eight were allotted for business and recreation, and eight for study and devotion. All our actions should be regulated by religion and reason. Honours, monuments and all the works of vanity are demolished and destroyed by time; but the reputation of wisdom is transmitted to posterity.

No. 5.

Different sorts of Verbs in the Imperative.

Forget the faults of others and remember your own. Study universal rectitude and cherish religious hope. Suit your desires to things, and not things to your desires. Consider yourself a citizen of the world and deem nothing which regards humanity unworthy of your notice.

«Learn to condemn all praise betimes,
For flattery is the nurse of crimes.»

«Deal with another as you'd have
Another deal with you;

What you are unwilling to receive
Be sure you never do.»

Be kind and courteous to all and be not eager to take offence without just reason. Let your words agree with your thoughts and be followed by your actions. Let reason go before every action. Bid her get it better. Abstain from plea-

sure and bear evil. Expect the same filial duty from your children which you paid to your parents.

«Oh man, degenerate man offend no more!
Go, learn of brutes, thy Maker to adore.»

No. 6.

The Nominative, though generally placed before the Verb, is often placed after it; especially when the sentence begins with *here*, *there*, etc., or when *if* or *though* is understood or a *question asked*.

Among the many enemies of friendship may be reckoned suspicion and disgust. Among the great wonders and blessings of the creation may be classed the regularities of times and seasons. Here stands the oak. And there sat in a window a certain young man named James. Where is thy brother? Is he at home? Were he at leisure, I would wait upon him. Had he been more prudent, he would be more fortunate. I would give more to the poor, were I able. Could we survey the chambers of sickness and distress, we should often find them peopled with the victims of intemperance, sensuality, indolence and sloth. Were he to assert it, I would not believe it, because he told a lie before. Gaming is a vice pregnant with every evil; and to it are often sacrificed wealth, happiness and every thing virtuous and valuable.

No. 7.

The Nominative is often a great distance from the Verb.

The man who is neither elated by success nor dejected by disappointment, whose conduct is not influenced by any change of circumstance to deviate from the line of integrity, possesses true fortitude of mind. He whose constant employment is detraction and censure; who looks only to find faults, and speaks only to publish them, will be dreaded, hated and avoided. The man who retires to meditate mischief and to exasperate his own rage; whose thoughts are employed only on means of distress and contrivances of ruin; whose mind never pauses from the remembrance of his own sufferings, but to indulge the calamities of another;—may justly be numbered among the most miserable of human beings; among those who

are guilty without reward; who have neither the gladness of prosperity nor the calm of innocence.

No. 8.

The Infinitive, or part of a sentence, being equal to a noun, is often the Nominative to a Verb.

To be ashamed of the practice of precepts, which the heart approves and embraces, from a fear of the censure of the world, marks a feeble and imperfect character. To endure misfortune with resignation, and bear it with fortitude, is the striking characteristic of a great mind. To rejoice in the welfare of our fellow creatures, is, in a degree, to partake of their good fortune, but to repine at their prosperity, is one of the most despicable traits of a narrow mind.—To be ever active in laudable pursuits, is the distinguishing characteristic of a man of merit. To be at once merry and malicious, is the sign of a corrupt heart and a weak understanding. To bear adversity well, is difficult; but to be temperate in prosperity is the height of wisdom. To dread no eye, and to suspect no tongue, is the great prerogative of innocence.

No. 9.

The relative is the nominative to the verb, when it stands immediately before the verb;—when not close to the verb, it is in the objective and governed either by the verb that comes after it, or by a preposition. This rule, though general, is not without many exceptions, especially in Poetry.

The value of any possession is to be chiefly estimated by the relief which it can bring us in the time of our greatest need. The veil which covers from our sight the events of succeeding years, is a veil woven by the hand of mercy. The chief misfortunes that befall us in life, can be traced to some vices or follies which we have committed. Beware of those rash and dangerous connexions which may afterwards load you with dishonour. True charity is not a meteor which occasionally glances, but a luminary, which in its ordinary and regular course, dispenses a benignant influence. Wealth cannot confer greatness; for nothing can make that great, which the degree of nature has ordained to be little. Justice consists not

merely in performing those duties which the laws of society oblige us to perform, but in our duty to our Maker, to others and to ourselves.

No. 10.

When the antecedent and relative are *both* in the *nominative*, the relative is the *nominative* to the verb *next it*, and the antecedent is generally the *nominative* to the *second* verb.

He who performs every part of his business in its due place and season, suffers no part of time to escape without profit. He that does good for the sake of virtue, seeks neither praise nor reward, though he is sure of both at the last. He that is the abettor of a bad action, is equally guilty with him that commits it. He who overcomes his bad passions, conquers his greatest enemies. That wisdom which enlightens the understanding and reforms the life, is the most valuable. Those, and those only, who have felt the pleasing influence of the most genuine and exalted friendship, can comprehend its beauties. He who is a stranger to industry, may possess, but he cannot enjoy; he only who is active and industrious, can experience real pleasure. That man, who is neither elated by success, nor dejected by disappointment, whose conduct is not influenced by any change of circumstances to deviate from the line of integrity, possesses true fortitude of mind.

No. 11.

What is equal to *that which*, or *the thing which*, and represents two cases; sometimes two *nominatives*; sometimes two *objectives*; sometimes a *nominative* and an *objective*, and sometimes an *objective* and a *nominative*. Sometimes it is an *adjective*.

Regard the quality rather than the quantity of what you read. If we delay till to-morrow what ought to be done to-day, we overcharge the to-morrow with a burden which belongs not to it. Choose what is most fit; custom will make it the most agreeable. Foolish men are more apt to consider what they have lost, than what they possess, and to turn their eyes on those who are richer than themselves, rather than on those who are under greater difficulties. What cannot be mended or prevented, must be endured. Be attentive

to what you are about, and take pains to do it well. What you do not hear to-day, you will not tell to-morrow. Mark what it is his mind aims at in the question, and not what words he utters.

No. 12.

The compound relatives, *whoever* and *whosoever* are equal to *he who*. *Whatever* and *whatsoever* are equal to *the thing which*, and represent two cases, like *what*, as before.

Whatever gives pain to others, deserves not the name of pleasure. Whoever lives under an habitual sense of divine presence, keeps up a perpetual cheerfulness of temper. Aspire after perfection in whatever state of life you choose. Whoever is not content in poverty, would not be it in plenty; for the fault is not in the thing, but in the mind. Whatever is worth doing, is worth doing well. By whatever arts you may at first attract the attention, you can hold the esteem, and secure the hearts of others only by amiable dispositions and the accomplishments of the mind. Whatever delight, or whatever solace is granted by the celestials to soften our fatigues—in thy presence, oh health, thou parent of happiness! all those joys spread out and flourish. Whatever be the motive of insult, it is always best to overlook it, and revenge it in no circumstances whatever.

No. 13.

Do, *did* and *have* are auxiliary verbs when joined to another verb; when not joined to another verb, they are principal verbs and have their auxiliaries.

He who does not perform what he has promised is a traitor to his friend. Earthly happiness does not flow from riches; but from content of mind, health of body, and a life of piety and virtue. Examples do not authorize a fault. You did not get enough time to study your lesson. Did you see my book? Do you go to-morrow? I do not think it proper to play too long. Did he deceive you? I do not hate my enemies. Wisdom does not make a man proud. He who does the most good, has the most pleasure. Instead of adding to the afflictions of others, do whatever you can to alleviate them.

He did his work well. Did you do what I requested you to do? Deceit betrays a littleness of mind and is the resource of one who has not courage to avow his failings.

No. 14.

The verb *to be* has very often an adjective after it; and some adjectives seem so closely combined with it, as to lead one to suppose that he has got a passive verb.

Prudence and moderation are productive of true peace and comfort. If the powers of reflection were cultivated by habit, mankind would at all times be able to derive pleasure from their own breasts, as rational as it is exalted. Learning is preferable to riches; but virtue is preferable to both. He who rests on a principle within, is incapable of betraying his trust, or deserting his friend. Few things are impracticable in themselves. To study without intermission is impossible: relaxation is necessary; but it should be moderate. The Athenians were conceited on account of their own wit, science and politeness. We are indebted to our ancestors for our civil and religious liberty. An idle person is a kind of monster in the creation, because all nature is busy about him. She is conscious of her deficiency and will therefore be busy. I am ashamed of you. She is sadly forlorn.

No. 15.

1. Active and neuter verbs are often with their present participle joined to the verb *to be*.
2. A noun is always understood, when not expressed, after adjectives and adjective pronouns; such as, *few, many, this, that, all, each, every, either*.

1. While I am reading, you should be listening to what I read. He was delivering his speech when I left the house. They have been writing on botany. He might have been rising to eminence. I have been writing a letter, and I am just going to send it away. She was walking by herself when I met her. We should always be learning. A good man is always studying to be better.

2. Those only are truly great who are really good. Few set a proper value on their time. Those who despise the admonitions of their friends, deserve the mischiefs which their

own obstinacy brings upon them. Among the many social virtues which attend the practice of true religion, that of a strict adherence to truth is of the greatest importance. I saw a thousand. Of all prodigality, that of time is the worst. Some are naturally timid and bashful; some bold and active, for all are not alike.

No. 16.

The Past Participle has uniformly either a relative or personal pronoun, with some part of the verb *to be* understood, *before it*.

Knowledge softened with complacency and good breeding, will make a man beloved and admired. Gratitude and thanks are the least returns which children can make to their parents for the numberless obligations conferred on them. Precepts have little influence when not enforced by good example. He is of all human beings the happiest, who has a conscience untainted by guilt, and a mind so well regulated as to be able to accommodate itself to whatever the wisdom of Heaven shall think fit to ordain. Mere external beauty is of little estimation, and deformity when associated with amiable dispositions and useful qualities, does not preclude our respect and approbation. True honour, as defined by Cicero, is the concurrent approbation of good men. Modesty seldom resides in a breast not enriched with nobler virtues. An elevated genius, employed in little things, appears like the sun in his evening declination; he remits his splendour, but retains his magnitude, and pleases more, though he dazzles less. Economy, prudently and temperately conducted, is the safeguard of many virtues; and is in a particular manner favourable to exertions of benevolence. We find man placed in a world, where he has by no means the disposal of the events that happen. Children often labour more to have the words in their books imprinted in their memories, than to have the meanings fixed in their minds.

No. 17.

Supply all the words that are understood. The infinitive *to be* or *to have* is often understood.

Disdain even the appearance of falsehood, nor allow even the image of deceit a place in your mind. Those who want

firmness and fortitude of mind seem born to enlist under a leader, and are the sinners or saints of accident. They lost their mother when very young. Of all my pleasures and comforts, none have been so durable, satisfactory and unalloyed, as those derived from religion. Is not her younger sister fairer than she?

«For contemplation he, and valour formed;
For softness she, and sweet attractive grace.»

We were earlier at church than they. I have more to do than he. He is as diligent as his brother. Virtue is of intrinsic value and good desert, and of indispensable obligation; not the creature of will, but necessary and immutable; not local or temporary, but of equal extent and antiquity with the divine mind; not a mode of sensation, but everlasting truth; not dependent on power, but the guide of all power.

No. 18.

1. The objective after an active verb, especially when a relative, is often understood.
2. Sometimes the antecedent is improperly omitted, and must be supplied.

1. He that moderates his desires, enjoys the best happiness this world can afford. Few reflections are more distressing than those we make on our own ingratitude. The more true merit a man has, the more does he applaud it in others. It is not easy to love those we do not esteem. Our good or bad fortune depends on the choice we make of our friends. An over-cautious attention to avoid evils often brings them upon us, and we frequently run headlong into misfortunes by the very means we pursue to avoid them.

2. For reformation of error, there were that thought it a part of christian duty to instruct them. There have been that have delivered themselves from their misfortunes by their good conduct and virtue.

Who live to nature rarely can be poor;
Who live to fancy rarely can be rich.
Who steals my purse, steals trash.

For if there be first a willing mind, it is accepted according to that a man has, and not according to that he has not.

No. 19.

1. The objective case generally comes *after* the verb that governs it; but when *relative*, and in some other cases, it comes *before* it.
2. When two adjectives follow a verb, the *thing* is governed by the *verb* and the person by a *preposition* understood.

1. Them that honour me I will honour.—Him whom you ignorantly worship declare I unto you. Me he restored to my office, and him he hanged. Those who have laboured to make us wise and good, are the persons whom we ought particularly to love and respect. The cultivation of taste is recommended by the happy effects which it naturally tends to produce on human life. These curiosities we have imported from China.

2. And he gave him tithes of all. Who gave thee this authority? He gave them bread from heaven. Give me understanding. Friend, lend me three crowns. I will send you corn. Tell me your name. He taught me grammar. Bring me a candle. Get him a pen. Write him a letter. Tell me nothing but the truth.

No. 20.

1. The poets often use an *adjective* as a *noun*; and sometimes join an adjective to their new-made noun.
2. They sometimes improperly use an *adjective* for an *adverb*.
3. Though the adjective generally comes before the noun, it is sometimes placed after it.

1. And where he vital breathes, there must be joy.

—Who shall tempt with wandering feet,

The dark, unbottomed, infinite abyss,

And through the *palpable* OBSCURE find out

His uncouth way, or spread his airy flight,

Upborne with indefatigable wings,

Over the *vast* ABRUPT, ere he arrive

The happy isle?—*Paradise lost, book II.*

2. Thus Adam his illustrious guest besought:

And thus the god-like angel answered *mild*.

The lovely young Lavinia once had friends,

And fortune smiled *deceitful* on her birth.

When even at last the solemn hour shall come

To wing my mystic flight to future worlds

I *cheerful* will obey; there with new powers,

Will rising wonders sing.

The rapid radiance *instantaneous* strikes
Th' illumin'd mountain.—*Gradual* sinks the breeze
Into a perfect calm.

3. But I lose myself in him, in light *ineffable*.
———Pure serenity apace
Induces thought and contemplation *still*.

SYNTAX.

Syntax is that part of grammar which treats of the proper arrangement and connection of words in a sentence.

It principally consists of two parts, *Concord* and *Government*.—*Concord* is the agreement which one word has with another in number, gender, case or person.

Government is that power which one part of speech has over another, in determining its mood, tense or case.

A sentence is an assemblage of words making complete sense; as, John is happy.

Sentences are either *simple* or *compound*.

A simple sentence contains but *one subject* and *one finite verb*; as, life is short.

A compound sentence contains two or more simple sentences connected by one or more conjunctions; as, Time is short, but eternity is long. Idleness produces vice, want, and misery.

A phrase is two or more words used to express a certain relation between ideas without affirming anything; as, in truth; to be plain.

The principal parts of a simple sentence are the *subject* (nominative), the *attribute* (verb), and the *object*.

The *subject* is the thing chiefly spoken of; the *attribute* is the thing affirmed or denied; and the *object* is the thing affected by such action.

RULE I.

A verb must agree with its nominative in number and person; as, he plays; the bird sings; we read.

N. B. The following exercises are to be corrected.

Exercises.

I loves reading and you loves writing. A soft answer turn away wrath. We is but of yesterday and knowest nothing.

The days of man is but as grass. Frequent commission of crimes harden his heart. In our earliest age the contagion of manners are observable. The pyramids of Egypt has stood more than three thousand years. A judicious arrangement of studies facilitate improvement. A variety of pleasing objects charm the eye. A few pangs of conscience now and then interrupts his pleasure, and whispers to him that he once had better thoughts. There is more cultivators of the earth than of their own hearts. Nothing but vain and foolish pursuits delight some persons. There is two or three of us who have seen the work. Him and her were of the same age.

RULE II.

An active verb governs the objective case; as, I love him; he loves me.

Exercises.

He loves we. He and they we know, but who art thou? She that is idle and mischievous, reprove sharply. Let thou and I the battle try. He whom committed the offence, thou shouldst correct, not I who am innocent. Esteeming themselves wise, they became fools. Upon seeing I he turned pale. Having exposed himself too much to the fire of the enemy, he soon lost an arm in the action. They who opulence has made proud, and who luxury has corrupted, are not happy. It will be very difficult to reconcile he conduct with the principles he professes.

RULE III.

Prepositions govern the objective case; as, to whom much is given, of him much shall be required.

Exercises.

To who will you give that pen? Will you go with I? Without I ye can do nothing. Withhold not good from they to who it is due. With who do you live? Great friendship subsists between he and I. He laid the suspicion on somebody, I know not who, in the company. Who do you speak to? Flattery can hurt none but those who it is agreeable to. It is not I you are engaged with. The person who I travelled with, has sold the horse which he rode on during our journey. I hope it is not I you are displeased with.

RULE IV.

1. Two or more singular nouns, coupled with *and*, require a verb and pronoun in the plural; as, James and John are good boys, for they are busy.
2. Two or more singular nouns separated by *or* or *nor* require a verb and pronoun in the singular; as, James or John has to do it.

Exercises.

Socrates and Plato was the most eminent philosophers of Greece. The rich and poor meets together. Life and death is in the power of the tongue.

The time and place of the conference was agreed on. Idleness and ignorance is the parent of many vices. Wisdom, virtue, happiness dwells with the golden mediocrity. Luxurious living and high pleasures begets a languor and satiety that destroys all enjoyment.

Neither precept nor discipline are so forcible as example. Either the boy or girl were present. Neither character nor dialogue were yet understood. The modest virgin, the prudent wife, or the careful matron, are much more serviceable in life than petticoated philosophers. It must be confessed that a lampoon or satire do not carry in them robbery or murder. Man is not such a machine as a clock or a watch, which move merely as they are moved. I don't know whether the man or the woman were here.

RULE V.

Conjunctions couple the same moods and tenses of verbs; as, do good and seek peace; couple the same cases of nouns and pronouns; as, He and I are happy.

Exercises.

He reads and wrote well. He or me must go. Anger glances into the breast of a wise man, but will rest only in the bosom of fools. My brother and him are tolerable grammarians. If he understands the subject, and attend to it, he can scarcely fail of success. Professing regard and to act differently, mark a base mind. Rank may confer influence, but will not necessarily produce virtue. He is not rich, but is respectable. Our season of improvement is short; and whether used or not, will soon pass away.

RULE VI.

One verb governs another in the infinitive mood; as, forget not to do good. To, the sign of the infinitive is not used after the verbs: bid, dare, need, make, see, hear, feel, let, perceive, be, hold, observe, have and know.

Exercises.

Strive learn. They obliged him do it. Newton did not wish obtrude his discoveries on the public. His penetration and diligence seemed vie with each other. Milton cannot be said have contrived the structure of an epic poem. We ought forgive injuries.

They need not to call upon her. I dare not to proceed so hastily. I have seen some young persons to conduct themselves very discreetly. It is the difference of their conduct which makes us to approve the one and to reject the other. It is a great support to virtue, when we see a good mind to maintain its patience and tranquillity under injuries and afflictions, and to cordially forgive its oppressors.

RULE VII.

When two nouns come together signifying different things, the first is put in the possessive case; as John's book; on eagles' wings. When two nouns come together, signifying the same things, they agree in case; as, Cicero the orator; the city Edinburgh.

Exercises.

Pompeys pillar. Virtues reward. A mans manner's frequently influence his fortune. Asa his heart was perfect with the Lord. A mothers tenderness and a fathers care are natures gifts for mans advantage. Helen her beauty was the cause of Troy its destruction. Wisdoms precepts are the good mans delight. He asked his father, as well as his mothers advice.

RULE VIII.

When a noun of multitude conveys *unity* of idea, the verb and pronoun should be singular: as, The class was large. When a noun of multitude conveys *plurality* of idea, the verb and pronoun should be plural; as, My people do not consider, they have not known me.

Exercises.

The meeting were well attended. The people has no opinion of its own. Send the multitude away, that it may go and buy itself bread. The people was very numerous. The council was not unanimous. When the nation complain, the rulers should listen to their voice. The regiment consist of a thousand men. The multitude eagerly pursues pleasure as its chief good. Some people is busy and yet does very little. Never were any nation so infatuated. But this people who knows not the law are cursed.

RULE IX.

The verb *to be* should have the same case after it that it has before it; as, I am he; it is I.

Exercises.

It was me who wrote the letter. Be not afraid, it is me. It was not me. It was him who got the first prize. I am sure it was not us that did it. It was them who gave us all this trouble. I would not act the same part again if I were him.

I saw one whom I took to be she. Let him be whom he may, I am not afraid of him. Who do you think him to be? Whom do men say that I am? She is the person who I understood it to have been. Was it me that said so? I am certain it was not him. It was either him or his brother that gained the first prize.

RULE X.

Sentences that imply contingency and futurity require the subjunctive Mood; as, if he be alone, give him the letter.—When contingency and futurity are not *both* implied, the indicative ought to be used; as, if he speaks as he thinks, he may safely be trusted.

Exercises.

If man smites his servant and he die, he shall surely be put to death. If he acquires riches, they will corrupt his mind. If he does promise, he will certainly perform. Oh! that his heart was tender. Though he falls he shall not be utterly cast down. Despise not any condition, lest it happens to be thy own. Take care that thou breakest not any of the

established rules. If he is but discreet, he will succeed. If he be but in health, I am content. If he does but intimate his desire, it will produce obedience.

RULE XI.

Some conjunctions have their correspondent conjunctions; thus, *neither* requires *nor* after; as, neither he nor his brother was right.

Though—yet; though he was rich, yet for our sakes, etc.

Whether—or; whether he will do it or not, I cannot tell.

Either—or; either she or her sister must go.

As—as; mine is as good as yours.

As—so; as the one dies, so dies the other.

So—as; he is not so wise as his brother.

So—that; I am so weak that I cannot walk.

Exercises.

It is neither cold or hot. It is so clear as I need not explain it. The one is equally deserving as the other. I must be so candid to own, that I have been mistaken. He was so angry as he could not speak. As far as I am able to judge the book is well written. His raiment was so white as snow.

RULE XII.

When the present participle is used as a noun it requires an *article* before it and *of* after it; as, the sum of the moral law consists in the obeying of God and the loving of our neighbour as ourselves.

Exercises.

Learning of languages is very difficult. The learning anything speedily requires great application. By the exercising our faculties they are improved. By observing these rules you may avoid mistakes. This was a betraying the trust reposed in him. The not attending to this rule is the cause of a very common error. Our approving their bad conduct may encourage them to become worse. For his avoiding that precipice he is indebted to his friend's care. I remember it being done.

RULE XIII.

Pronouns agree in gender, person and number with the nouns for which they stand, and the relative with its antecedent; as, John is here; he came an hour ago. Every tree is known by *its* fruit; the book which was lost.

Exercises.

Answer not a fool according to her folly. A stone is heavy and the sand weighty, but a fool's wrath is heavier than it both. Can any person on their entrance into life be fully secure that they shall not be deceived? The mind of man cannot be long without some food to nourish the activity of his thoughts. This boys are diligent. You have been absent this two hours. Those sort of people fear nothing. We have lived here this many years. The chasm made by the earthquake was twenty foot broad, and one hundred fathom in depth. I have no interests but that of virtue and truth. Those sort of favours did real injury. Those which seek wisdom will certainly find her. That is the vice whom I hate. The tiger is a beast of prey, who destroys without pity.

RULE XIV.

When the relative is preceded by two antecedents of different persons, it and the verb generally agree in person with the last, as, Thou art the boy that was dux yesterday.

Exercises.

I am the man who command you. I am the person who adopt this sentiment and maintains it. I am a man who speak but seldom. Thou art the friend that hast often relieved me, and that has not deserted me now in the time of peculiar need. The king dismissed his minister without any inquiry who had never before committed so unjust an action. The soldier with a single companion, who passed for the bravest man in the regiment, offered his services.

RULE XV.

1. When singular nominatives of different persons are separated by *or* or *nor*, the verb agrees with the person next it; as, Either thou or I am in fault.
2. A singular and plural nominative separated by *or* or *nor* require a verb in the plural; as, neither the captain nor the sailors were saved.—When, however, the verb *to be* stands between a singular and a plural nominative, it agrees with the one next it, or with the one which is more naturally the subject of it; as, the wages of sin *is* death.

Exercises.

1. Either I or thou am greatly mistaken. He or I is sure of this week's prize. Either Thomas or thou has spilt the ink on my paper. John or I has done it. He or thou is the person who must go to London on that business.

2. Neither poverty nor riches was injurious to him. He or they was offended at it. Whether one or more was concerned in the business, does not yet appear. The cares of this life, or the deceitfulness of riches has choked the seeds of virtue in many a promising mind. Neither the king nor his ministers deserves to be praised.

RULE XVI.

It is improper to use both a noun and its pronoun as a nominative to the same verb; as, man that is born of a woman *he* is of few days and full of trouble.

Exercises.

The king he is just. The men they were there. Many words they darken speech. My banks they are furnished with bees. Who, instead of going about doing good, they are perpetually intent upon doing mischief. Disappointments and afflictions, however disagreeable, they often improve us. Simple and innocent pleasures they alone are durable. Man, though he has great variety of thoughts, and such, from which others as well as himself might receive profit and delight, yet they are all within his own breast.

«The friends thou hast and their adoption tried,
Grapple them to thy soul with hooks of steel.»

RULE XVII.

The infinitive mood, or part of a sentence, is sometimes used as the nominative to a verb; as, For me to live is Christ, and to die is gain. His being idle was the cause of his ruin.

Exercises.

To be carnally minded are death, but to be spiritually minded are life and peace. To live soberly, righteously and piously, are required of all men. That warm climates should

accelerate the growth of the human body, and shorten its duration, are very reasonable to believe. To be temperate in eating and drinking, to use exercise in the open air, and to preserve the mind from tumultuous emotions, is the best preservative of health. That it is our duty to promote the purity of our minds and bodies, to be just and kind to our fellow creatures, and to be pious and faithful to Him who made us, admit not of any doubt in a rational and well-informed mind.

RULE XVIII.

Double comparatives and superlatives are improper. — Two negatives in the same sentence are improper. Mine is a more better book, but John's is the most best. I cannot by no means allow it. Mine is a better book, but John's is the best. I can by no means allow it, I cannot by any means allow it.

Exercises.

The nightingale's voice is the most sweetest in the grove. I cannot drink no more. He cannot do nothing. James is a worser scholar than John. We have not done nothing to-day. He will never be no taller. He is the *chiefest* among ten thousand. His assertion was *most untrue*. Nothing never affected her so much.

PROMISCUOUS EXERCISES.

The great power and force of custom forms another argument against keeping bad company. As far as I can judge, a spirit of independency and freedom tempered by sentiments of decency and the love of order, influence, in a most remarkable manner, the minds of the subjects of this happy republic. It was wrote extempore.

RULE XIX.

1. Adverbs are for the most part placed before adjectives, after verbs active or neuter, and frequently between the auxiliary and the verb; as, she behaves well and is much beloved.
2. Adjectives should not be used as adverbs, nor adverbs as adjectives; as, use a little wine for your *often* infirmities, instead of: *frequent* infirmities.

Exercises.

1. We should not be overcome totally by present events. He unaffectedly and forcibly spoke, and was heard attentively by the whole assembly. Not only he found her employed, but pleased and tranquil also. In the proper disposition of adverbs, the ear carefully requires to be consulted as well as the sense. He was determined to invite back the king, and to call together his friends.

2. They are miserable poor. They behaved the noblest. He lived in a manner agreeably to the dictates of reason and religion. He was extreme prodigal, and his property is now near exhausted. They lived conformable to the rules of prudence. From whence come ye? They hoped for a soon and prosperous issue to the war.

RULE XX.

1. The comparative degree of superiority or inferiority require *than* after them, and the comparative of equality and *such* require *as*; as, greater than I; no other than he; such as do well; as learned as he.
2. When two objects are compared the comparative is generally used; if more than two, the superlative is used.

Exercises.

He has little more of the scholar besides the name. Be ready to succour such persons who need your assistance. They had no sooner arisen but they applied themselves to their studies. Such men that act treacherously ought to be avoided. He gained nothing farther by his speech, but only to be recommended for his eloquence. This is none other but the gate of paradise. Such sharp replies that cost him his life. To trust in him is no more but to acknowledge his power.

2. James is the wisest of the two. He is the weakest of the two. I understood him the best of all others who spoke on the subject. Eve was the fairest of all her daughters. James is the wittier of the three, not the wiser.

RULE XXI.

1. A pronoun after *than* or *as* either agrees with the verb, or is governed by a verb or preposition understood; as, he is wiser than I; she loved him more than me.
2. The distributive pronouns each, every, either, neither, agree with nouns and verbs in the singular number only; as, each of his brothers is in a favourable situation. Every man is accountable for himself; either of them is good enough.

Exercises.

1. John can write better than me. He is as good as her. You are a much greater loser than me by his death. They know how to write as well as him; but he is a better grammarian than them. She is not so learned as him. If the king give us leave, we may perform the office as well as them that do. Who revealed the secrets he ought to have concealed? Nothing, it was her.

2. Let each esteem others better than themselves. Every one of the letters bear date after his banishment. Each of them, in their turn, receive the benefits to which they are entitled. Every person, whatever be their station, are bound by the duties of morality and religion.

Are either of these men your friend? The king of Israel and the king of Judah sat either (improperly for each) of them on his throne.

RULE XXII.

When two persons or things are contrasted, that refers to the first mentioned and *this* to the last; as, virtue and vice are as opposite to each other as light and darkness; *that* ennobles the mind, *this* debases it. — The *former* and the *latter* are often used instead of that and this; especially for persons, or in order to avoid equivocation.

Exercises.

Wealth and poverty are both temptations; this tends to excite pride, that discontentment. Religion raises men above

themselves, irreligion sinks them beneath the brutes; that bend them down to a poor pitiable speck of perishable earth, this exalts them to the skies. — And the cloud came between the camp of Egyptians and the camp of Israel, and it was a cloud and darkness to them, but it gave light to these. Moses and Salomon were men of the highest renown; the latter was remarkable for his meekness, the former was renowned for his wisdom. I have always preferred cheerfulness to mirth; the former I consider as an act, the latter as a habit of the mind.

RULE XXIII.

1. In the use of verbs and words that in point of time relate to each other, the order of time must be observed; as, I remember him these many years, should be: I have remembered him etc.
2. It is improper to place a clause of a sentence between a possessive case and the word which usually follows it: thus, she began to extol the former's, *as she called him*, excellent understanding; should be, she began to extol the excellent understanding of the former, as she called him.

Exercises.

1. I have compassion on the multitude because they continue now with me three days. The next New Year's day I shall be at school three years. The court laid hold of all the opportunities which the weakness or necessities of princes afford it, to extend its authority. His sickness was so great, that I often feared he would have died before our arrival. It would have given me great satisfaction to relieve him from that distressed situation.

2. They very justly condemned the prodigal's, as he was called, senseless and extravagant conduct. They implicitly obeyed the protector's, as they called him, imperious mandates. Beyond this the arts cannot be traced of civil society. This is Paul's, the christian hero, and great apostle of the gentiles, advice.

RULE XXIV.

Before names of places:

To, is used after a verb of motion; we went to Spain;

At, is used after the verb *to be*, I was at Bath;

In, is used before names of countries and large cities;

I live in London; in England.

At, is used before villages, towns and foreign cities;

as, he resided at Gretna Green, at Rome, at York.

Exercises.

They have just arrived to York and are going at Dublin. They will reside two months at England. I have been to London after having resided at France, and now I live in Bath. I was in the place appointed long before any of the rest. We touched in Liverpool on our way for New-York. He resides in Mavisbank in Scotland. She has lodgings at George's Square.

RULE XXV.

A is used before nouns in the singular number only. *The* is used before both numbers. The article is omitted before a noun that stands for a *whole species*; but it is used before an *individual* representing the whole of its species when compared with another individual representing another species; it is also omitted before the names of metals, minerals, arts, vices etc.

RULE XXVI.

Certain words and phrases must be followed by appropriate prepositions, such as:

| | | | |
|----------------------|------------------------|-------------------------|-----------------------|
| Accuse of. | Call on <i>or</i> for. | Disappoint in | Fall under. |
| Abhorrence of. | Change for. | <i>or</i> for. | Free from. |
| Acquit of. | Confide in. | Disapprove of. | Glad of <i>or</i> at. |
| Adapted to. | Conformable to. | Dissent from. | Independent of |
| Agreeable to. | Compliance | Eager in. | <i>or</i> on. |
| Adverse to. | with. | Engaged in. | Insist upon. |
| Bestow upon. | Die of <i>or</i> by. | Exception | Made of. |
| Boast <i>or</i> brag | Dependent up- | from. | Marry to. |
| of. | on. | Expert at <i>or</i> in. | Martyr for. |

| | |
|--------------------|-------------------------|
| Need of. | Swerve from. |
| Observance of. | Taste for <i>or</i> of. |
| Prejudice against. | True to. |
| Regard to. | Wait on. |
| Reconcile to. | Worthy of. |

Exercises.

He was totally dependent of the papal crown. He accused the minister for betraying the Dutch. You have bestowed your favours to the most deserving persons. His abhorrence to gaming was extreme. In compliance to his father's advice. Conformable with his plan. Agreeable with the sacred text. Call at your uncle. He died for thirst. He found none on whom he could safely confide. They boast in their great riches. This change is to the better. A strict observance after times and fashions.

Promiscuous Exercises

ON THE RULES OF SYNTAX.

John writes pretty. I shall never do so no more. The train of our ideas are often interrupted. He dare not act otherwise than he does. Those set of books was a valuable present. He was born at London, but he died in Bath. The father requested him and I to read more distinctly. Who did you buy your grammar from?

The peoples happiness is the statesmans honour. I have drunk no spirituous liquors this six years. Solid peace and contentment consists neither in beauty or riches, but in the favour of God. Three of them was taken into custody. Suppose life never so long, fresh accessions of knowledge may still be made. There was an earthquake which made the earth to tremble. If he does but approve my endeavours, it will be an ample reward.

For ever in this humble cell
Let thee and I my fair one dwell.

Evil communications corrupts good manners. Hannibal was one of the greatest generals whom the world ever saw. Prosperity, as Seneca truly asserted, it very much obstructs the knowledge of ourselves. I had no sooner placed her at my right hand, by the fire, but she opened to me the reason of her visit. James was resolved to not indulge in such a cruel amusement. There was much spoke and wrote on each side of the question; but I have chose to suspend my decision.

Specimens of etymological parsing.

«*Virtue ennobles us.*»

Virtue is a common substantive of the neuter gender, the third person, the singular number, and in the nominative case. (*Decline the noun.*) *Ennobles* is a regular verb active, indicative mood, present tense, and the third person singular. *Us* is a personal pronoun, of the first person plural, and in the objective case. (*Decline it.*)

«*Strive to improve.*»

Strive is an irregular verb neuter, in the imperative mood, and of the second person singular. (*Repeat the present tense, the imperfect tense and the perfect participle.*) *To improve* is a regular verb neuter, and in the infinitive mood.

«*We should be kind to them, who are unkind to us.*»

We is a personal pronoun, of the first person, the plural number, and in the nominative case. *Should be* is an irregular verb neuter, in the potential mood, the imperfect tense, and the first person plural. (*Rep. the present tense.*) *Kind* is an adjective, in the positive state. (*Repeat the degrees of comparison.*) *To* is a preposition. *Them* is a personal pronoun, of the third person, the plural number, and in the objective case. (*Decline it.*) *Who* is a relative pronoun, and in the nominative case. (*Decline it.*) *Are* is an irregular verb neuter, indicative mood, present tense, and the third person

plural. *Unkind* is an adjective in the positive state. *To* is a preposition. *Us* is a personal pronoun, of the first person, the plural number, and in the objective case.

Specimens of syntactical parsing.

« *Vice produces misery.* »

Vice is a common substantive, of the neuter gender, the third person, the singular number, and in the nominative case. *Produces* is a regular verb active, the indicative mood, present tense, the third person singular, agreeing with its nominative « *vice,* » according to Rule I, which says (*here repeat the rule*). *Misery* is a common substantive, of the neuter gender, the third person, the singular number, and the objective case, governed by the active verb « *produces* » according to Rule II, which says etc.

« *Wisdom or folly governs us.* »

Wisdom is a common substantive. (*Repeat the gender, person, number, and case.*) *Or* is a disjunctive conjunction. *Folly* is a common substantive. *Governs* is a regular verb active, indicative mood, present tense, third person singular, agreeing with its nominative case « *wisdom* » or « *folly* » according to Rule IV, 2, which says etc. *Us* is a personal pronoun, of the first person, plural number, and in the objective case governed by the active verb « *governs,* » agreeably to Rule II, which says etc.

« *Good works being neglected, devotion is false.* »

Good works being neglected, being independent of the rest of the sentence, is the case absolute, according to Rule XVIII. *Devotion* is a common substantive. *Is* is an irregular verb neuter, indicative mood, present tense etc. *False* is an adjective in the positive state and belongs to its substantive « *devotion.* »

« *The Emperor Marcus Aurelius was a wise and virtuous prince.* »

The is the definite article. *Emperor* is a common substantive, of the masculine gender, the third person, the singular number, and in the nominative case. *Marcus Aurelius* is a proper name, and in the nominative case, because it is put in apposition with the substantive « emperor. » *Was* is an irregular verb neuter, indicative mood, imperfect tense, and the third person singular, agreeing with its nominative case « emperor. » *A* is the indefinite article. *Wise* is an adjective, and belongs to its substantive « prince. » *And* is a copulative conjunction. *Virtuous* is an adjective and belongs, etc. *Prince* is a common substantive, and in the nominative case, agreeably to Rule IX.

« *Living expensively and luxuriously destroys health. By living frugally and temperately, health is preserved.* »

Living expensively and luxuriously, is the nominative case to the verb « destroys, » agreeably to Rule XVII. *Living frugally and temperately*, is a substantive phrase in the objective case, governed by the preposition « by, » according to Rule III., which says etc.

PUNCTUATION.

Punctuation is the art of pointing written composition in such a manner as may naturally lead to its proper meaning, construction and delivery.

Of the Comma.

1. A simple sentence in general requires only a full stop at the end; as, True politeness has its seat in the heart.
2. The simple members of a compound sentence are separated by a comma; as, crafty men contemn studies, simple men admire them, and wise men use them.

3. The persons in a direct address are separated from the rest of the sentence by commas; as, I thank you, sir. Colonel, your most obedient.

4. Three or more nouns, adjectives, verbs, participles, or adverbs, are separated by commas; as, The sun, the moon, and the stars are the glory of nature.

5. A comma is used between the two parts of a sentence that has its natural order inverted; as, Him, that is weak in the faith, receive ye.

Of the Semicolon.

The semicolon is used to separate two members of a sentence less dependent on each other than those separated by the comma.

Sometimes the two members have a mutual dependence on one another, both in sense and syntax; sometimes the preceding number makes complete sense of itself and only the following is dependent; and sometimes both seem to be independent.

Examples.

Mercy and truth preserve the king; and his throne is upheld by mercy. As a roaring lion and a raging bear; so is a wicked ruler over the people. Philosophy asserts, that Nature is unlimited in her operations; that she has inexhaustible stores in her reserve; that knowledge will always be progressive; and that all future generations will continue to make discoveries of which we have not the least idea. The pride of wealth is contemptible; the pride of learning is pitiable; the pride of dignity is ridiculous; and the pride of bigotry is insupportable.

Of the Colon.

The colon is used when the preceding part of the sentence is complete in sense and construction; and the following part is some remark naturally arising from it, and depending on it in sense, though not in construction; as, study to acquire the habit of thinking: no study is more important.

The *colon* is generally used when the conjunction is *understood*; and the *semicolon*, when the conjunction is *expressed*.

Of the Period.

When a sentence is complete in construction and sense, it is marked with a period; as, Jesus wept.

A period is sometimes admitted between sentences connected by such words as *but*, *and*, *for*, *therefore*, *hence*, etc. And he arose *and* came to his father.

Of other Characters used in Composition.

Interrogation (?) is used when a question is asked.

Admiration (!) or *Exclamation* is used to express any sudden motion of the mind.

Parenthesis () is used to enclose some necessary remark in the body of another sentence.

Apostrophe (') is used in place of a letter left out.

Caret (^) is used to show that some word is either omitted or interlined.

Hyphen (-) is used at the end of a line, to show that the rest of the word is at the beginning of the next line. It also connects compound words, tea-pot.

Section (§) is used to divide a discourse or chapter into portions.

Paragraph (¶) is used to denote the beginning of a new subject.

Crotchets [] or *Brackets* are used to enclose a word or sentence which is to be explained in a note, or the explanation itself, or to correct a mistake, or supply some deficiency.

Annotation (" ") is used to show that a passage is quoted in the author's words.

Acute accent (') to denote a short syllable;

The grave (`) a long.

Diæresis (¨) is used to divide a diphthong into two syllables; as, aërial.

Abbreviations.

| | | |
|--|-------------|---|
| Ante Christum. | A. C. | Before Christ. |
| Artium Baccalaureus. | A. B. | Bachelor of Arts (or B. A.). |
| Anno Domini. | A. D. | In the year of our Lord. |
| Artium Magister. | A. M. | Master of Arts. |
| Ante Meridiem. | A. M. | In the forenoon. |
| Anno Urbis Condita. | A. U. C. | From the building of the city of Rome. |
| Baccalaureus Divinitatis. | B. D. | Bachelor of Divinity. |
| Custos Privati Sigilli. | C. P. S. | Keeper of the Privy Seal. |
| Doctor Divinitatis. | D. D. | Doctor of Divinity. |
| Exempli gratia. | E. G. | For example. |
| Regiæ Societatis Socius. | R. S. S. | Fellow of the Royal Society. |
| Regiæ Societatis antiquo- rum Socius. | R. S. A. S. | Fellow of the Royal Society of Antiquaries. |
| Georgius Rex. | G. R. | George the King. |
| Id est. | I. E. | That is. |
| Jesus Hominum Salvator. | J. H. S. | Jesus the Saviour of men. |
| Legum Doctor. | L. D. | Doctor of Laws. |
| Medicinæ Doctor. | M. D. | Doctor of Medicine. |
| Memoriæ Sacrum. | M. S. | Sacred to the Memory (or S. M.). |
| Nota Bene. | N. B. | Note well; take notice. |
| Post Meridiem. | P. M. | In the afternoon. |
| Post Scriptum. | P. S. | Postscript. |
| Ultimo. | Ult. | Last (month). |
| Et cætera. | etc. | And the rest; and so forth. |

| | | | |
|----------|-------------------------------|-------|-------------------|
| L. C. J. | Lord Chief Justice. | MSS. | Manuscripts. |
| Knt. | Knight. | N. S. | New Style. |
| K. G. | Knight of the Garter. | O. S. | Old Style. |
| K. B. | Knight of the Bath. | J. P. | Justice of Peace. |
| K. C. B. | Knight Commander of the Bath. | Bp. | Bishop. |
| K. C. | Knight of the Crescent. | R. N. | Royal Navy. |
| K. P. | Knight of St. Patrick. | Cr. | Creditor. |
| K. T. | Knight of the Thistle. | Esq. | Esquire. |
| MS. | Manuscript. | Bart. | Baronet. |
| | | Capt. | Captain. |

PROSODY.

Prosody consists of two parts: the former teaches the true pronunciation of words, comprising *Accent*, *Quantity*, *Emphasis*, *Pause*, and *Tone*; and the latter the laws of *Versification*. Here we are only speaking of the latter part.

Of Versification.

Versification is the arrangement of a certain number and variety of syllables, according to certain laws.

Rhyme is the correspondence of the last sound of one verse to the last sound or syllable of another.

Feet and *Pauses* are the constituent parts of verse. We shall consider these separately.

Of Poetical Feet.

A certain number of syllables connected form a foot. They are called *feet* because it is by their aid that the voice steps, as it were, along through the verse, in a measured pace; and it is necessary that the syllables which mark this regular movement of the voice, should, in some manner, be distinguished from the others. In English, syllables are divided into accented and unaccented; the accented syllables being as strongly distinguished from the unaccented, by the peculiar stress of the voice upon them, are equally capable of marking the movement, and pointing out the regular paces of the voice, as the long syllables were by their quantity among the Romans.

All feet used in poetry consist either of two or of three syllables; and are reducible to eight kinds, four of two syllables, and four of three, as follows.

| <i>Dissyllable.</i> | <i>Trisyllable.</i> |
|---------------------|---------------------|
| A Trochee. | A Dactyl. |
| An Iambus. | An Amphibrach. |
| A Spondee. | An Anapaest. |
| A Pyrrhic. | A Tribrach. |

A Trochee has the first syllable accented and the last unaccented; as, *hateful, pettish*.

An Iambus has the first syllable unaccented, and the last accented: as, *betray, consist*.

A Spondee has both the syllables or words accented: as, *the pale moon*.

A Pyrrhic has both the words or syllables unaccented; as, *on the old tree*.

A Dactyl has the first syllable accented, and the two latter unaccented; as, *Labourer, possible*.

An Amphibrach has the first and last syllable unaccented, and the middle one accented; as, *Delightful*.

An Anapæst has the two first unaccented and the last accented; as, *contravene, acquiesce*.

A Tribach has all its syllables unaccented; as, *numerable*.

Iambic verses may be divided into several species, according to the number of feet or syllables of which they are composed.

1. The shortest form of the english Iambich consists of an Iambus with an additional *short* syllable; as.

Disdaining,
Complaining,
Consenting,
Repenting.

It is only met with in stanzas.

2. The second form of english Iambic is also too short to continue through any great number of lines. It consists of *two* Iambuses:

What place is here!
What scenes appear!

3. The third form consists of *three* Iambuses.

In places far or near
Or famous or obscure
Where wholesome is the air,
Or where the most impure.

4. The fourth is made up of *four* Iambuses.

And may at last my weary age,
Find out the peaceful hermitage.

5. The fifth form consists of *five* Iambuses.

How lov'd, how valu'd once, avails thee not,
 To whom related, or by whom begot:
 A heap of dust alone remains of thee;
 'Tis all thou art, and all the proud shall be.

This is called the *heroic* measure.

6. The sixth species of English Iambich is commonly called the *Alexandrine* measure. It consists of *six* Iambuses.

For thou art but of dust, be humble and be wise.

The Alexandrine is sometimes introduced in the heroic rhyme.

7. The seventh and last form is made up of *seven* Iambuses.

The Lord descended from above,

And bow'd the heavens high.

This was anciently written in one line.

Trochaic verse is of several kinds.

1. The shortest Trochaic verse in English consists of *one* Trochee and a long syllable.

Tumult cease

Sink to peace.

This measure can seldom be used on serious occasions.

2. The second English form of Trochaic consists of *two* feet, and is also rarely used.

In the days of old

Fables plainly told.

3. The third form consists of *three* Trochees; sometimes with an additional long syllable.

When our hearts are mourning:

Restless mortals toil for nought;

Bliss in vain from earth is sought.

4. The fourth Trochaic species consists of *four* Trochees, and may also take an additional long syllable.

Round us roars the tempest louder.

Idle after dinner in his chair

Sat a farmer, ruddy, fat and fair.

But this measure is very uncommon.

5. The fifth Trochaic species is composed of *five* Trochees and likewise uncommon.

All that walk on foot or ride in chariots,

All that dwell in palaces or garrets.

6. The sixth form consists of *six* Trochees.

On a mountain, stretch'd beneath a hoary willow,
Lay a shepherd swain, and view'd the rolling billow.

The *Dactylic* measure is very uncommon.

From the low pleasures of this fallen nature.

Anapæstic verses are divided into several species.

1. The first and simplest form of genuine anapæstic verse is made up of *two* Anapæsts.

But his courage 'gan fail,
For no arts could avail.

This form admits of an additional short syllable.

2. The second species consists of *three* Anapæsts.

O ye woods spread your branches apace;
To your deepest recesses I fly;
I would hide with the beast of the chase;
I would vanish from every eye.

This is a very pleasing measure and much used, both in solemn and cheerful subjects.

3. The third kind consists of *four* Anapæsts.

May I govern my passions with absolute sway;
And grow wiser and better as life wears away.

This measure will admit of a short syllable at the end:

On the warm cheek of youth, smiles and roses are bending.

The preceding are the different kinds of the principal feet, in their more simple forms. They are capable of *numerous* variations, by the intermixture of those feet with each other; and by the admission of secondary feet.

We have observed, that English verse is composed of feet formed by *accent*, and that when the accent falls on vowels, the feet are equivalent to those formed by quantity.

Of poetical pauses.

There are two sorts of pauses: the *sentential* and the *harmonic* pauses. The latter of which we are treating here, may be subdivided into the *final* pause and the *cæsural* pause. These sometimes coincide with the sentential pause (comma, semicolon, colon, and period), sometimes have an independent state, that is, exist where there is no stop in the sense.

The final pause takes place at the end of the line, closes the verse, and marks the measure: the *cæsura* divides it into equal or unequal parts.

The *cæsura* is commonly on the fourth, fifth or sixth syllable of heroic verse.

There are also semi-pauses.

Glows' while he reads," but trembles' as he writes.

Reason' the card," but passion' is the gale.

Rides' in the whirlwind'" and directs' the storm.

SELECT PIECES.

Trial of Mary,

QUEEN OF SCOTS.

Morgan and Paget, two active partisans of the catholics, knew that an officer, named Savage, had undertaken to assassinate Elizabeth, and hoped to raise a sufficient party to liberate Mary. Ballard wished to correspond with her, but knowing his suspicious character, she refused to have any communication with him.

Her friends, and particularly one young man named Babington, had not the same prudence; he listened to the plan of assassination, and thought it should not be left to one individual, but that six persons ought to be appointed to that important service; while others should liberate the captive queen. The result of all these conferences was regularly communicated to the agents of government by a spy named Pooley, who had joined Mary's friends for the purpose of exciting them to acts which would bring their mistress to destruction.

In order to obtain sufficient evidence against her, a brewer, who supplied the castle with beer, was bribed to offer himself to convey notes from Mary to her friends, and Pawlet, the jailer, was told to connive at it. In a few days a note was put into the hands of Babington; it was written in the cipher of Mary, and requested him to send her a packet, that he had received from the French ambassador.

The packet was sent, and then forwarded to Walsingham, Elizabeth's minister: it was deciphered, and then sent to the castle: in a few days an answer was transmitted by the same means to Walsingham, by which he was able to implicate Mary with the conspirators.

Hitherto Walsingham had kept the secret within his own breast, but now he communicated it to the queen, who ordered him to bring the conspirators immediately to justice: fourteen were arrested, condemned, and executed in the barbarous manner of that age. — In order to have all possible evidence against Mary, her papers were seized and conveyed to Walsingham, and a council was held to determine her fate: Leicester recommended poison, but Walsingham said that the reputation of Elizabeth rendered a public trial necessary, and a commission of forty-seven peers, privy counsellors, and judges, was appointed. A deputation of them was sent to the castle of Fotheringay, to which Mary had been removed; but she refused to submit to their authority, saying the queen of England was not her superior, and that she would not disgrace the Scottish crown, by consenting to stand as a criminal at the bar of an English court. Hatton, one of the deputation, told her that her obstinacy arose from a consciousness of her guilt: this observation affected her deeply, and at length she consented. — The accusation was, that she had conspired with foreigners and traitors to procure an invasion and to put the queen to death. She replied that she was not the subject of Elizabeth, but her equal; that between equals there was no other law but the law of nature, and by that law she was justified to seek deliverance from an unjust captivity. She had offered conditions which Elizabeth herself had pronounced reasonable, and she had declared that, if they were rejected, she would have recourse to other means: who then, said she, could blame her if in such circumstances she had not refused the offers of her friends? She however firmly denied having conspired the death of the queen.

The proofs were then produced, and if the papers were genuine, there can be no doubt of Mary's guilt; but it must be observed, that all the documents were only copies, and no attempt was made by the crown lawyers to show what had

become of the originals. Mary declared that the notes attributed to her were forgeries, and that she had been informed that they were fabricated by Walsingham. He rose and denied the charge, but in an evasive manner.

After hearing the evidence, the court adjourned, to meet on the 25th of october in the Star-Chamber, at Westminster. They assembled on that day, and pronounced that Mary, commonly called queen of Scotland, daughter of James V., by pretending title to the crown of England, had compassed and imagined the death of the royal person of the queen Elizabeth. — The sentence was communicated to the unfortunate Mary on the 22nd of November; she received it calmly, saying her real crime was her religion, and that she would proudly shed her blood for it. She then wrote to the queen, requesting that her body might be conveyed to France, and deposited near that of her mother; that she might send a jewel, a farewell and a blessing to her son; that her servants might be allowed to keep the small bequests she should make them; and finally, that her execution should be public, otherwise her enemies would say, as they had of others, that she had committed suicide. Elizabeth did not answer this letter.

More than two months passed before the queen could determine on signing the death-warrant; not that she felt any compassion for Mary, or any wish to save her: on the contrary, she ardently desired her death, but wished to escape the shame of ordering her execution. The French and Spanish ambassadors made several useless efforts to save her, and her son James of Scotland wrote a strong remonstrance to Elizabeth. She became impatient, and frequently exclaimed that among the thousands who professed attachment to her, no one would spare *her* the necessity of dipping her own hands in the blood of Mary. At length she said to Walsingham, « Surely Pawlet and Drury might ease me of this burden, do you sound them.» A letter was therefore sent to those two jailers, informing them that the queen charged them with want of zeal in not having long ago shortened the life of their captive. Pawlet replied that his goods and his life were at the service of her majesty, but that he would never sacrifice his conscience by shedding blood. When Elizabeth was informed of his refusal,

she burst into a rage, saying she could find others less scrupulous. She had signed the death-warrant, and given it to Davidson her secretary, to carry it to the chancellor for the purpose of having the great seal affixed; the next morning she changed her mind, and forbade him to do it, but it was already done, and in the hands of lord Burleigh, who immediately called a council, and orders were given for the execution.

On the 7th of February 1557, the Earls of Shrewsbury and Kent announced to Mary that the following day was fixed for her execution. She replied, that having languished nearly twenty years in prison, she was glad to see the day that would terminate her sufferings; she then laid her hand on a Testament, and called on God to witness her innocence.

She passed the night in arranging her affairs, and in prayer; about four she retired to rest. She rose at day-break, read her will to her household, and distributed presents among them; after which she went to the oratory, accompanied by her people, and they all knelt down to prayers. The great hall of the castle, which had been prepared for the execution, was thrown open at seven o'clock, and the gentlemen of the county were admitted. At eight, the procession moved from the chapel, the queen's servants prepared to follow her, but were forbidden; she remonstrated strongly, and at last, with much difficulty, obtained permission for four of her men and two woman-servants to be admitted.

Mary wore the richest of her dresses for the occasion, and when her maids began to disrobe her, the executioners, fearing to lose their perquisites, interfered, and began to take off her upper garments; she said with a smile, that she was not accustomed to employ such grooms, nor to undress before so much company. Mary had demanded the spiritual assistance of her chaplain, but it was refused, and doctor Fletcher, dean of Peterborough, was appointed to read the protestant service; but she would not listen to him. When all was ready, a handkerchief was put over her eyes, and the executioners, taking her by the arms, led her to the block; she knelt down and said, «O Lord! into thy hands I commend my spirit.»

At this moment the spectators were so affected at the

sight of a beautiful woman about to suffer an ignominious death, that their sobs and groans disconcerted the headsman; he trembled, missed his aim, and inflicted a deep wound in the lower part of the skull; the victim remained motionless, and at the third stroke, the head was severed from the body. The executioner then held it up and cried, «God save Queen Elizabeth!» The dean replied, «So perish all her enemies!» The earl of Kent added, «So perish all the enemies of the Gospel!» No one however said Amen.

When Elizabeth was informed of the execution, she affected surprise, grief and anger, protesting that she thought the warrant was still in the possession of Davidson. Her grief was perhaps sincere; but it was not because Mary had suffered, but that she had been executed in virtue of a warrant signed by her. She made excuses to the foreign courts, and to convince them how displeased and afflicted she was, she suspended the ministers who had directed the execution of her own warrant: they humbly acknowledged their offence and were restored to favour.

James of Scotland threatened vengeance, but he was appeased by the flatteries of the queen, and the insinuations of her partisans, who reminded him, that as he was then the next heir to the English crown, it would be impolitic to offend the queen; and thus the death of Mary was left unrevenged, though her brother-in law was then king of France, and her son king of Scotland.

The Battle of Waterloo.

Hearing that the Prussians had been beaten by Napoleon with the loss of fifteen thousand men, Wellington saw that it would be perilous to retain a position in which his left-flank was exposed to the enemy. He therefore, withdrew to a spot in the front of the forest of Soignies. On his right were the old chateau, walled garden, and enclosures of Hougoumont; on his left the rugged hedge and farm house of La Haye Sainte; and a little to the rear of his centre the village of Waterloo, lying on the great road from Brussels to Charleroi.

At day-break on the 18th the troops rose from the wet ground on which they had slept, and prepared for battle. Glittering in armour, and moving to the clang of warlike music, the French squadrons presented an imposing spectacle. Partly screened from the enemy's view, by a ridge in their front, the British took their places in grim silence.

A hot assault upon Hougoumont was the commencement of the strife. Unable to take it, Napoleon directed against it a battery of howitzers. The chateau was speedily wrapt in flames, but the garrison boldly maintained their footing in the court-yard. A still more desperate attack had been made, meantime, by twenty thousand men, in four columns, upon the left centre of the British. The Belgians were routed, but the English succeeded, at length, in throwing the enemy into confusion. At the moment, Ponsonby's brigade of cavalry rushed from the hedge of la Haye Sainte, and broke with irresistible fury through the hostile columns. The astonished enemy threw themselves upon their faces, and cried for quarter: two thousand prisoners and two eagles were taken. Sweeping over the scene of slaughter, the daring horsemen carried a battery of twenty-four-guns; scattered a third line of artillery-men and lancers, and cutting the throats and traces of the horses belonging to the former, rendered nearly useless no fewer than eighty guns. While now breathless and exhausted, the noble fellows were assailed and broken by Milhaud's cuirassiers. Ponsonby was slain, and not more than a fifth of his men returned to the British lines.

The defenders of La Haye Sainte, were now surrounded by thousands of assailants, and having exhausted their ammunition, were all slain at their post. Possessed of this advantage, Napoleon strove to force the British centre. The advanced columns, however, were checked by a well-directed fire; while Milhaud's cuirassiers were overwhelmed, and trodden down, man and horse, beneath the impetuous charge of the British horseguards. Fresh troops arrived in their place, and for more than three hours, the British centre was incessantly attacked. Again and again the masses of cavalry were scattered; and again they were charged. Whenever their loud cries were heard, and the flash of their armour was seen, as

they again swept on, the British artillerymen left their guns and took refuge in the squares. When they withdrew the artillerymen again rushed forward and hurled upon them a tempest of grape. The Duke was present, animating his soldiers: «Stand fast, 95th» he cried, «what would they say of us in England.» «Never fear, sir,» was the firm reply, «we know our duty.»

Napoleon was now growing uneasy: some Prussian troops had already made their appearance, and although driven into the woods, might yet recover and endanger his right flank. He resolved to make a decisive movement upon the right centre of his enemy, and for this purpose, arrayed the old guards in two columns. The charge of this formidable body had never failed, and the French loudly cheered in anticipation of victory. As the old guard thundered on, the British left moved forward, and poured such a fire as scattered the cavalry, and fearfully ploughed the flanks of the infantry. On through the storm, the veterans moved, drove back the guns, and seemed already triumphant, when the voice of Wellington was heard: «Up, guards, and at them!» The men sprang to their feet, four deep, and the whole of the first two ranks of the French sank at once beneath their fire. Steadily forward the English moved, pushing the yielding yet struggling column down the slope. Advancing swiftly from the right and left, other British troops now fell upon both flanks of the enemy, broke its array, and swept it in headlong disorder into Napoleon's centre.

At that moment the French guard was then completely broken, Wellington beheld the distant banners of Prussia, and ordered the advance of his whole force. With one shout fifty thousand men advanced, while thirty-six thousand Prussians joined in the attack. The French army was now little better than a disorderly crowd. From a low eminence, Napoleon directed four guns against the pursuers, but was soon obliged to mount and flee. The old guard threw themselves into four squares, and endeavoured still to resist. In a few minutes they were nearly all slain or captured.

After taking possession of one hundred and fifty guns and six thousand prisoners, the weary English entrusted the pursuit to Blücher and his soldiers. Well did these men remember,

and cruelly did they repay, the ruthless tyranny of the French on Prussia. They made no prisoners: all whom they overtook, they destroyed. Nine times that night did the exhausted French prepare their bivouacs, and nine times were they aroused by the shout and trumpet and flashing blade of the Prussian. The loss of the British was two thousand and forty-seven killed, and more than eight thousand wounded. The killed and wounded of the French amounted at least, to forty thousand. Few of the survivors ever again appeared in arms.

Common things.

AIR.

1. Air most necessary to existence. — 2. Respiration. — 3. Fresh air necessary. — 4. Air is material. — 5. Its weight and momentum. — 6. How weighed. — 7. The atmosphere. — 8. Its pressure. — 9. Bodies not crushed by it. — 10. Illustrated by a cupping-glass.

1. Of all common things, air is the most common. No space or place is accessible to us that is not filled with it. It is of all material wants that which is most incessantly indispensable to our existence. Food is an occasional want, an intermitting supply is all that is needed. Clothing may in certain cases be dispensed with, and habit may inure us to a deficiency of it. The want of warmth must be extreme to become fatal. But the privation of air, even for a brief interval, is attended with instant and certain death.

Unlike other natural wants, our consumption of air is not voluntary. The action of the lungs is like the oscillations of a pendulum. It is incessant, sleeping or waking, in sickness or in health; sitting, standing, or moving, it is maintained with a regularity and continuity quite independent of the will. Its suspension is the suspension of life.

Must we not then be prompted by a natural and irresistible curiosity to obtain some acquaintance with a physical agent so universal, so omnipresent, and so indispensable to our vitality?

2. Air is the transparent, colourless, invisible, light, and attenuated fluid with which we are always surrounded. It is drawn into our lungs by the action called suction, and after remaining a moment there, is forced out through the mouth and nose by the muscular compression of the chest. This alternate action, by which the air enters and leaves the lungs, is called respiration. During the moment it remains in the lungs, it undergoes a certain change, which we shall presently explain, in consequence of which, when exhaled, it is not the same as that which was inhaled. The effect produced on the blood by this change is essential to the maintenance of life.

The air which, thus changed, is exhaled, is unfit for respiration. If, therefore, the same air be taken several times successively into the lungs, death must ensue.

3. The air around us, therefore, requires to be continually changed, that which we exhale being carried away and replaced by fresh and pure air.

4. The apparent lightness of air, the freedom with which we move through it, and its invisibility, led the ancients to imagine that it was unsubstantial and immaterial, and hence the disembodied souls of the dead came to be called *spirits*, from the word *spiritus*, which signifies *air*.

5. It is a great mistake, however, to imagine that air is destitute of weight, that quality which is inseparable from whatever is material. Light it undoubtedly, is, but only by comparison. Bulk for bulk, it is lighter than stone, earth, or water, or any other substance in the solid or liquid state. But light as it is, it has a certain definite weight, and a quantity of it can be assigned which will weigh many tons.

The pressure produced by its weight is under certain assignable circumstances quite enormous, and when it is moved with a certain velocity its force is so irresistible that trees are torn by it from their roots, the most solid buildings overturned and reduced to ruins, and devastations spread over vast tracts of country. — Nothing can be easier than to show practically that air has weight, and what that weight is.

6. If a glass flask, having the capacity of a cubic foot, be provided with a proper neck, furnished with a stop-cock, we shall be able, by means of a well-constructed syringe, to

extract from it the air which it contains, and by closing the stop-cock, and detaching the syringe, we shall have the flask void of air. Let it be weighed in that state in a good balance. Let the stop-cock be then opened so as to admit the air to fill the flask, and let it then be weighed again. It will be found to weigh 1.291 oz. or 564.8 grains more than it did when void of air.

It follows therefore that a cubic foot of air weighs 564.8 grains. Since the weight of a cubic foot of water is 997.125 oz., it follows that, bulk for bulk, water is heavier than air in the proportion of 997.125 to 1.291, that is, $772\frac{1}{2}$ to 1.

Since thirty-six cubic feet of water weigh a ton, it follows that $772\frac{1}{2}$ times thirty-six cubic feet of air also weigh a ton.

It appears, therefore, that 27810 cubic feet of air will weigh a ton.

7. When it is considered that the mass of air which, taken collectively, is called the *atmosphere*, extends above us to the height of more than fifty miles, it will easily be imagined that the weight with which it presses on the surface of every object exposed to it, must be very considerable. If, for example, we take a square inch of level surface, it is clear that that square inch must bear the weight of a column of air extending from that surface to the top of the atmosphere. It has been ascertained by experiments, susceptible of the greatest precision, that this pressure or weight amounts to about 15 lbs., and that it is subject, from time to time, to a variation not exceeding three quarters of a pound.

8. It is a well known property of fluids, that any pressure which they exert, acts equally in all possible directions. Thus, if any body be let down into the sea, the weight of the water which is above it will press equally on its top, bottom, and sides. It is very easy to demonstrate this by a simple experiment.

Let several empty bottles be carefully corked, and being loaded with weights so as to sink in the water, the neck of one being presented upwards, that of another downwards, another horizontal, and the others oblique in various degrees, it will be found that when they have been sunk to a certain depth, the corks will be all forced into the bottles by the

pressure of the surrounding water, with which the bottles will be immediately filled, and this will take place equally, and at the same time, with all the bottles, in whatever directions the corks may be presented to the water.

It is evident, therefore, that the pressure produced by the weight of the incumbent column of water at any given depth is equally propagated in all directions, and that a body, a fish for example, or the body of a diver, sustains that pressure, not downwards only, or on the upper surface of the body as might be at first imagined, but equally on the under surface, the sides, and, in a word, on every part of the body in contact with the water.

Now this equal transmission or propagation of pressure in all directions, is not an exclusive property of water, but is common to all substances whatever in the fluid state. Air possesses fluidity in even a greater degree, if possible, than water, being more freely mobile, and air accordingly transmits freely, and without diminution, in all directions any pressure which it receives. The stratum of air in which we live is under the pressure, as has just been stated, of the incumbent column of air extending upwards to the limits of the atmosphere, this pressure amounting to 15 lbs. on each square inch. A body, therefore, exposed to the contact of this air is subject at all parts of its surface, upper, under, and lateral, to this pressure; and the total amount of the pressure by which it is affected will be expressed in pounds' weight by the number obtained by multiplying the number of square inches in its entire surface by 15.

The body of a man of average size has a surface of about 2000 square inches. The total pressure which it sustains from the surrounding air is therefore 15×2000 , or 30000 lbs., or nearly fourteen tons!

9. It may seem wonderful that a force so enormous, acting on all parts of the surface of the body, should not crush it and actually destroy its delicately constructed organs. This, however, is prevented by the perfect equilibrium of pressure outwards, and inwards, produced by the property of fluids just explained, in virtue of which they transmit freely, and undiminished, the pressure in all directions. The fluids which

fill the entire vascular system are exposed, as well as the surface of the body, to the pressure of the atmosphere, which enters the lungs and all the cavities and open parts of the organs. These fluids transmit that pressure to all the inner parts of the body, so that the skin and integuments are pressed by them outwards by a force exactly equal to that with which the air presses the external surface of the skin inwards. These outward and inward pressures are necessarily always equal, because in fact, they are one and the same pressure, *i. e.*, that of the air, the pressure on the external surface acting inwards, being the immediate action of the air, and the pressure of the internal fluids acting outwards being the same pressure of the air transmitted by those fluids to the inside of the skin and integuments.

10. That this outward pressure, transmitted by the fluids which fill the organs under the skin, is really at all times in operation, and that it is only counteracted by the immediate pressure of the external air upon the skin, is rendered conspicuously manifest in the well-known surgical operation of cupping. In that process the open mouth of the cupping-glass being pressed upon the skin so as to exclude all communication with the external air, the air within the cup is withdrawn, or partially withdrawn, by means of a syringe attached to the glass. The moment the skin within the glass is relieved from even a small part of the pressure of the external air by this means, the outward pressure of the fluids under the skin begins to take effect, being no longer resisted; it swells up the skin within the glass, and when the skin thus dilated is punctured with the lancet, the blood is propelled from it by the force of the pressure of the fluids under the skin acting outwards.

11. The free transmission of pressure in all directions is a property which air has in common with water and other liquids. It has, however, another quality eminently characteristic, which is not found in liquids, or any other form of matter. The property we refer to is unlimited compressibility.

1. Air poisoned in crowded rooms. — 2. Necessity of ventilation. —
 3. Air not absolutely transparent or colourless.

1. In apartments or buildings where persons are crowded together in large numbers, more especially when they are illuminated by artificial light, there is, therefore, an enormous and rapid production of a noxious gas, as well by respiration as by the lamps, candles, or gas-burners used for illumination. Although in large public buildings which are habitually thus filled, proper means of ventilation are often provided, this is not the case in general in private residences, where such assemblies are only occasional. Hence it happens that large parties, balls and other social entertainments given in private houses are extremely injurious to the health. Multitudes are crowded together in brilliantly-lighted rooms. The respiration, the exhalation from the skin produced by an elevated temperature and by the exercise of dancing, and the combustion of vast numbers of candles, lamps, and gas-lights, evolve carbonic acid in large quantities, which, having no means of escape, accumulates until the company becomes painfully sensible of its ill-effects on respiration. Relief is then sought by opening one or more windows or doors, by which currents of fresh air are let in, and the foul air drawn out. If the air thus admitted were of a proper temperature, this palliative of the evil might be admitted to be partially efficient; but the air thus introduced is usually of a temperature from twenty to forty degrees lower than that of the room. The persons exposed to these sudden cold currents, more especially females, having their highly heated skins and open pores, extensively uncovered, receive a chill, by which the integument, contracting, drives back into the blood the fluids which ought to have been permitted to escape by cuticular transpiration. Hence arise numberless diseases, rheumatisms, colds, fevers, and in more cases than is ever known or acknowledged, premature and ultimate death.

2. It will be apparent from these considerations how much it behoves architects, builders and proprietors to provide proper expedients in the erection of private residences for the efficient ventilation of rooms.

3. We have stated that air is colourless and transparent, and this is practically true not only of common air, but of gases generally, when they are exhibited in such moderate quantities as are usually submitted to observation or experiment. Strictly speaking, however, air is not absolutely transparent or absolutely free from colour.

When a fluid is very faintly coloured, its peculiar hue is only perceptible when a considerable depth or thickness of it is submitted to view. If a tapering glass, such as those used for champagne, be filled with pale sherry or other liquor of a like colour, the peculiar colour of the liquid will be distinctly enough perceived at the top of the glass, when the eye views a certain thickness of it; but the colour becomes fainter and fainter towards the point of the cone, where it is scarcely perceptible. If a glass tube of small bore be dipped in the liquid, and, the finger being applied at the upper end to stop it, it be raised, the liquid which will be suspended in the tube will appear as transparent and colourless as water. It cannot be doubted, nevertheless, that the liquid in the tube has the same colour as the liquid in the glass. The colour is not perceived only because the quantity in the tube is too small to reflect sufficient colour to produce a sensible effect on the eye.

The atmosphere is in the same circumstances. The colour even reflected from a considerable volume of it is too faint to be perceptible. Thus the air which fills a room, or which intervenes between the eye and the buildings, trees, and other objects around us, appears quite transparent and colourless, and we see all such objects distinctly through it in their proper colours. But when, in the daytime, we look up through fifty or sixty miles height of air, illuminated by solar light, we find that a strong and decided tint of blue is perceived. This azure, which in the absence of clouds from the celestial vault, belongs not to anything which occupies the regions of the universe, in which the heavenly bodies are placed, but to the vast mass of air through which these bodies are seen.

To perceive this peculiar colour of air, however, it is not necessary, that so vast a mass should be presented to the eye. Distant mountains appear bluish, not because that is their colour, but because it is the hue of the aërial medium through

which we look at them. As we approach them, the quantity of the intervening air being diminished, this bluish tint is no longer perceived, and they appear in their proper colours.

POETRY.

A Psalm of Life.

WHAT THE HEART OF THE YOUNG MAN SAID TO THE PSALMIST.

Tell me not, in mournful numbers,
Life is but an empty dream!
For the soul is dead that slumbers,
And things are not what they seem.

Life is real! Life is earnest!
And the grave is not its goal;
Dust thou art, to dust returnest,
Was not spoken of the soul.

Not enjoyment, and not sorrow,
Is our destined end or way;
But to act that each to-morrow
Finds us farther than to day.

Art is long and time is fleeting,
And our hearts, though stout and brave,
Still, like muffled drums, are beating
Funeral marches to the grave.

In the world's broad field of battle,
In the bivouac of life,
Be not like dumb, driven cattle!
Be a hero in the strife!

Trust no Future, how'er pleasant!
 Let the dead Past bury its dead!
 Act — act in the living Present!
 Heart within, and God o'erhead!

Lives of great men all remind us
 We can make our lives sublime,
 And, departing, leave behind us
 Foot-prints on the sands of time;

Foot-prints, that perhaps another,
 Sailing o'er life's solemn main,
 A forlorn and shipwrecked brother,
 Seeing, shall take heart again.

Let us, then, be up and doing,
 With a heart for any fate;
 Still achieving, still pursuing,
 Learn to labour and to wait.

LONGFELLOW.

The Reaper and the flowers.

There is a reaper, whose name is Death,
 And, with his sickle keen,
 He reaps the bearded grain at a breath,
 And the flowers that grow between.

«Shall I have caught that is fair?» saith he;
 «Have nought but the bearded grain?
 Though the breath of these flowers is sweet to me,
 I will give them all back again.»

He gazed at the flowers with tearful eyes,
 He kissed their drooping leaves,
 It was for the Lord of paradise
 He bound them in his sheaves.

« My Lord has need of these flowerets gay, »
 The Reaper said, and smiled;
 « Dear tokens of the earth are they,
 Where he was once a child.

—
 « They shall all bloom in fields of light
 Transplanted by my care,
 And Saints, upon their garments white,
 These sacred blossoms wear. »

—
 And the mother gave in tears and pain
 The flowers she most did love;
 She knew she should find them all again
 In the fields of light above.

—
 O, not in cruelty, not in wrath,
 The Reaper came that day;
 It was an angel, visited the green earth,
 And took the flowers away.

LONGFELLOW.

Wolsey.

Farewell, a long farewell to all my greatness!
 This is the state of man; to day he puts forth
 The tender leaves of hope, to-morrow blossoms,
 And bears his blushing honours thick upon him;
 The third day comes a frost, a killing frost;
 And, — when he thinks, good easy man, full surely
 His greatness is a-ripening, — nips his root,
 And then he falls, as I do. I have ventured,
 Like little wanton boys that swim on bladders,
 These many summers in a sea of glory;
 But far beyond my depth: my high blown pride
 At length broke under me; and now has left me,
 Weary, and old with service, to the mercy
 Of a rude stream that must for ever hide me,

Vain pomp, and glory of this world, I hate ye;
 I feel my heart new open'd: O, how wretched
 Is that poor man, that hangs on princes' favours!
 There is, betwixt that smile we would aspire to,
 That sweet aspect of princes, and their ruin,
 More pangs and fears than wars or women have;
 And when he falls, he falls like Lucifer,
 Never to hope again.

SHAKSPEARE.

The Rose.

The rose had been wash'd, just wash'd in a shower,
 Which Mary to Anna convey'd;
 The plentiful moisture encumber'd the flower,
 And weigh'd down its beautiful head.

—

The cup was all fill'd and the leaves were all wet,
 And it seem'd to a fanciful view,
 To weep for the buds it had left with regret,
 On the flourishing bush where it grew.

—

I hastily seized it, unfit as it was
 For a nosegay, so dripping and drown'd,
 And swinging it rudely, too rudely, alas!
 I snapp'd it; it fell to the ground.

—

«And such,» I exclaim'd, «is the pitiless part
 Some act by the delicate mind,
 Regardless of wringing and breaking a heart
 Already to sorrow resign'd.

—

«This elegant rose, had I shaken it less,
 Might have bloom'd with its owner awhile;
 And the tear that is wiped with a little address,
 May be follow'd perhaps by a smile.»

COWPER.

Dante.

Tuscan, that wanderest through the realm of gloom,
 With thoughtful pace, and sad majestic eyes,
 Stern thoughts and awful from thy soul arise,
 Like Tarinata from his fiery tomb,
 Thy sacred song is like the trump of doom;
 Yet in thy heart what human sympathies,
 What soft compassion glows, as in the skies
 The tender stars their clouded lamps relume!
 Methinks I see thee stand, with pallid cheeks,
 By Fra Hilario in his diocese,
 As up the convent walls, in golden streaks
 The ascending sunbeams mark the day's decrease;
 And as he asks what there the stranger seeks,
 Thy voice along the cloister whispers, «Peace!»

LONGFELLOW.

Virtue.

Sweet Day, so cool, so calm, so bright,
 The Bridal of the Earth and Sky,
 The Dews shall weep thy Fall to-night,
 For thou must die.

Sweet Rose, whose hue, angry and brave,
 Bids the rash Gazer wipe his Eye,
 Thy Root is ever in its grave,
 And thou must die.

Sweet Spring, full of sweet Days and Roses,
 A Box where Sweets compacted lie;
 My Music shows ye have your closes,
 And all must die.

Only a sweet and virtuous soul,
 Like season'd Timber, never gives,
 But though the whole world turn to coal,
 Then chiefly lives!

HERBERT.

A Defence of Poetry.

I can refell opinion, and approve
 The state of poesy, such as it is,
 Blessed, eternal, and most true divine:
 Indeed, if you will look on poesy
 As she appears in many, poor and lame,
 Fetch'd up in remnants and old worn-out rags,
 Half-starved for want of her peculiar food,
 Sacred invention; then, I must confirm
 Both your conceit and censure of her merit:
 But view her in her glorious ornaments,
 Attired in the majesty of art,
 Set high in spirit with the precious taste
 Of sweet Philosophy; and, which is most,
 Crown'd with the rich traditions of a soul,
 That hates to have her dignity prophaned
 With any relish of an earthly thought
 Oh then how proud a presence doth she bear!
 Then is she like herself, fit to be seen
 Of none but grave and conservated eyes.
 Nor is it any blemish to her fame,
 That such lean, ignorant, and blasted wits,
 Such brainless gulls, should utter their stolen wares
 With such applauses in our vulgar ears;
 Or that their slubber'd lines have current pass,
 From the fat judgments of the multitude;
 But that this barren and infested age,
 Should set no difference 'twixt these empty spirits,
 And a true poet; than which reverend name
 Nothing can more adorn humanity.

BEN JONSON.

Cato's Soliloquy.

It must be so: Plato, thou reason'st well!
 Else, whence this pleasing hope, this fond desire,
 This longing after immortality?
 Or whence this secret dread and inward horror
 Of falling into nought? Why shrinks the soul
 Back on herself, and startles at destruction?
 'Tis the Divinity that stirs within us;
 'Tis heaven itself that points out an hereafter,
 And intimates eternity to man.
 Eternity! thou pleasing, dreadful thought!
 Through what variety of untried being,
 Through what new scenes and changes must we pass!
 The wide, the unbounded prospect lies before me;
 But shadows, clouds, and darkness, rest upon it.
 Here will I hold. If there's a Power above us,
 (And that there is, all Nature cries aloud
 Through all her works) he must delight in virtue;
 And that which he delights in, must be happy.
 But when! or where!—This world was made for Cæsar.
 I'm weary of conjectures—this must end them.
 Thus I am doubly arm'd: my death and life,
 My bane and antidote are both before me.
 This in a moment brings me to an end;
 But this informs me I shall never die.
 The soul, secured in her existence, smiles
 At the drawn dagger, and defies its point:
 The stars shall fade away, the sun himself
 Grow dim with age, and nature sink in years;
 But thou shalt flourish in immortal youth;
 Unhurt amidst the war of elements,
 The wreck of matter, and the crash of worlds.

ADDISON.

To Sleep.

Come, Sleep! O Sleep! the certain knot of peace
 The baiting place of wit, the balm of woe,
 The poor man's wealth, the prisoner's release,
 The indifferent judge between the high and low;
 With shield of proof, shield me from out the prease (press, crowd)
 Of those fierce darts despair at me doth throw;
 O, make in me those civil wars to cease;
 I will good tribute pay, if thou do so.
 Take thou of me smooth pillows, sweetest bed;
 A chamber deaf to noise, and blind to light;
 A rosy garland, and a weary head.
 And if these things, as being thine by right,
 Move not thy heavy grace, thou shalt in me,
 Livelier than elsewhere, Stella's image see.

SIR PHILIP SIDNEY.

Happiness.

O Happiness! our being's end and aim!
 Good, Pleasure, Ease, Content! Whate'er thy name;
 That something still which prompts the eternal sigh,
 For which we bear to live, or dare to die,
 Which still so near us, yet beyond us lies
 O'erlooked, seen double, by the fool and wise!
 Plant of celestial seed! if dropp'd below,
 Say, in what mortal soil thou deign'st to grow?
 Fair opening to some court's propitious shine
 Or deep with diamonds in the flaming mine?
 Twined with the wreaths Parnassian laurels yield,
 Or reap'd in iron harvests of the field?
 Where grows? — Where grows it not? — If vain our toil,
 We ought to blame the culture, not the soil.
 Fix'd to no spot is happiness sincere,
 'Tis nowhere to be found, or everywhere;
 'Tis never to be bought, but always free,
 And, fled from monarchs, St. John! dwells with thee.

Ask of the learn'd the way: the learn'd are blind;
 This bids to serve, and that to shun mankind;
 Some place their bliss in action, some in ease—
 Those call it pleasure, and contentment these;
 Some sunk to beasts, find pleasure end in pain;
 Some swell'd to gods, confess ev'n virtue vain;
 Or indolent, to each extreme they fall,
 To trust in everything, or doubt of all.
 Who thus define it, say they more or less
 Than this, that happiness is happiness?
 Take Nature's path and mad Opinions leave;
 All states can reach it, and all heads conceive;
 Obvious her goods, in no extreme they dwell.
 There needs but thinking right, and meaning well;
 And mourn our various portions as we please
 Equal is common sense and common ease.
 Remember, man, «the Universal Cause
 Acts not by partial, but by general laws;»
 And makes what Happiness we justly call,
 Subsist not in the good of one, but all.
 There's not a blessing individuals find,
 But some way leans and hearkens to the kind;
 No bandit fierce, no tyrant mad with pride,
 No cavern'd hermit rests self-satisfied:
 Who most to shun or hate mankind pretend,
 Seek an admirer, or would fix a friend.
 Abstract what others feel, what others think,
 All pleasures sicken, and all glories sink:
 Each has his share! and who would more obtain,
 Shall find the pleasure pays not half the pain.

Order is Heaven's first law; and this confess'd,
 Some are, and must be, greater than the rest,
 More rich, more wise; but who infers from hence
 That such are happier, shocks all common sense.
 Heaven to mankind impartial we confess
 If all are equal in their happiness:
 But mutual wants this happiness increase,
 All Nature's difference keeps all Nature's peace.

Condition, circumstance, is not the thing;
 Bliss is the same in subject or in king,
 In who obtain defence, or who defend,
 In him who is, or him who finds a friend:
 Heaven breathe through every member of the whole
 One common blessing, as one common soul.
 But Fortune's gifts, if each alike possess'd
 And each were equal, must not all contest?
 If then to all men happiness was meant,
 God in externals could not place content.

Fortune her gifts may variously dispose,
 And these be happy call'd, unhappy those;
 But Heaven's just balance equal will appear,
 While those are placed in hope, and these in fear:
 Not present good or ill, the joy or curse,
 But future views of better or of worse.
 O sons of Earth! attempt ye still to rise
 By mountains piled on mountains, to the skies?
 Heaven still with laughter the vain toil surveys,
 And buries madmen in the heaps they raise.

Know, all the good that individuals find,
 Or God and Nature meant to mere mankind,
 Reason's whole pleasure, all the joys of sense,
 See in three words, Health, Peace, and Competence.

POPE.

Ode To Adversity.

Daughter of Jove, relentless power,
 Thou tamer of the human breast,
 Whose iron scourge and torturing hour
 The bad affright, afflict the best!
 Bound in thy adamant chain,
 The proud are taught to taste of pain,
 And purple tyrants vainly groan
 With pangs unfelt before, unpitied and alone.

When first thy sire to send on Earth
 Virtue, his darling child, design'd,
 To thee he gave the heavenly birth
 And bade to form her infant mind.

Stern, rugged nurse! thy rigid lore
 With patience many a year she bore:
 What sorrow was, thou badest her know,
 And from her own she learn'd to melt at others' woe.

Scared at thy frown terrific, fly
 Self-pleasing Folly's idle brood,
 Wild Laughter, Noise and thoughtless Joy,
 And leave us leisure to be good:
 Light they disperse, and with them go
 The summer friend, the flattering foe;
 By vain Prosperity received,
 To her they vow their truth, and are again believed.

Wisdom, in sable garb array'd
 Immersed in rapturous thought profound;
 And Melancholy, silent maid,
 With leaden eye that loves the ground,
 Still on thy solemn steps attend:
 Warm Charity, the general friend,
 With Justice, to herself severe,
 And Pity, dropping soft the sadly-pleasing tear.

Oh! gently on thy suppliant's head,
 Dread goddess, lay thy chastening hand!
 Not in thy Gorgon terrors clad,
 Nor circled with the vengeful band
 (As by the impious thou art seen),
 With thundering voice, and threatening mien,
 With screaming Horror's funeral cry,
 Despair, and fell Disease, and ghastly Poverty.

Thy form benign, O goddess! wear,
 Thy milder influence impart,
 Thy philosophic train be there
 To soften, not to wound, my heart.
 The generous spark extinct revive,
 Teach me to love and to forgive;

Exact my own defects to scan,
 What others are to feel, and know myself a *man*.

GRAY.

On The University Carrier,

WHO SICKENED IN THE TIME OF VACANCY; BEING FORBID TO
 GO TO LONDON, BY REASON OF THE PLAGUE.

Here lies old Hobson; death hath broke his girt,
 And here, alas! hath laid him in the dirt;
 Or else the ways being foul, twenty to one,
 He's here stuck in a slough, and overthrown.
 'T was such a shifter, that, if truth were known,
 Death was half-glad when he had got him down.
 For he had, any time this ten years full,
 Dodg'd with him betwixt Cambridge and *the Bull*.
 And surely Death could never have prevail'd,
 Had not his weekly course of carriage fail'd;
 But lately finding him so long at home,
 And thinking now his journey's end was come,
 And that he had ta'en up his latest inn,
 In the kind office of a chamberlain
 Show'd him his room where he must lodge that night,
 Pull'd off his boots, and took away the light;
 If any ask for him, it shall be said:
 «Hobson has supt, and 's newly gone to bed.»

MILTON.

Paradise Lost, Book IX.

..... He (Satan) glad
 Of her (Eve's) attention gain'd with serpent-tongue
 Organic, or impulse of vocal air,
 His fraudulent temptation thus began.

«Wonder not, sovran mistress, if perhaps
 Thou canst, who art sole wonder! much less arm
 Thy looks, the heaven of mildness, with disdain,

Displeas'd that I approach thee thus, and gaze
 Insatiate: I thus single; nor have fear'd
 Thy awful brow, more awful thus retir'd.
 Fairest resemblance of thy Maker fair,
 Thee all things living gaze on, all things thine
 By gift, and thy celestial beauty adore
 With ravishment beheld! there best beheld,
 Where universally admir'd; but here
 In this enclosure wild, these beasts among,
 Beholders, rude, and shallow to discern
 Half what in thee is fair, one man except,
 Who sees thee? (and what is one?) who should be seen
 A goddess among gods, ador'd and serv'd
 By angels numberless, thy daily train.»

So gloz'd the Tempter, and his proem tun'd:
 Into the heart of Eve his words made way,
 Though at the voice much marvelling; at length,
 Not unamaz'd, she thus in answer spake:
 «What may this mean? language of man pronounc'd
 By tongue of brute, and human sense express'd?
 The first, at least, of these, I thought denied
 To beasts; whom God on their creation-day,
 Created mute to all articulate sound:
 The latter I demur: for in their looks
 Much reason, and in their actions, oft appears.
 Thee, serpent, subtlest beast of all the field
 I knew, but not with human voice endued;
 Redouble then this miracle, and say
 How camest thou speakable of mute, and how
 To me so friendly grown above the rest
 Of brutal kind, that daily are in sight?
 Say, for such wonder claims attention due.»
 To whom the guileful Tempter thus replied:
 «Empress of this fair world, resplendent Eve!
 Easy to me it is to tell thee all
 What thou command'st; and right thou shouldst be obey'd:
 I was at first as other beasts that graze
 The trodden herb, of abject thoughts and low,
 As was my food; nor aught but food discern'd

Or sex, and apprehended nothing high:
 Till on a day roving the field, I chanc'd
 A goodly tree far distant to behold
 Loaden with fruit of fairest colours mix'd,
 Ruddy and gold: I nearer drew to gaze;
 When from the boughs a savoury odour blown,
 Grateful to appetite, more pleas'd my sense
 Than smell of sweetest fennel, or the teats
 Of ewe or goat dropping with milk at even,
 Unsuck'd of lamb or kid, that tend their play.
 To satisfy the sharp desire I had
 Of tasting those fair apples, I resolved,
 Not to defer: hunger and thirst at once,
 Powerful persuaders, quicken'd at the scent
 Of that alluring fruit, urg'd me so keen.
 About the mossy trunk I wound me soon:
 For, high from ground, the branches would require
 Thy utmost reach or Adam's: round the tree
 All other beasts that saw, with like desire
 Longing and envying stood, but could not reach.
 Amid the tree now got, where plenty hung
 Tempting so nigh, to pluck and eat my fill
 I spar'd not; for such pleasure, till that hour,
 At feed or fountain, never had I found.
 Sated at length, ere long I might perceive
 Strange alteration in me, to degree,
 Of reason in my inward powers; and speech
 Wanted not long; though to this shape retain'd,
 Thence forth to speculations high or deep
 I turn'd my thoughts, and with capacious mind
 Consider'd all things visible in heaven,
 Or earth, or middle, all things fair and good:
 But all that fair and good in thy divine
 Semblance, and in my beauties heavenly ray,
 United I beheld; no fair to thine
 Equivalent or second! Which compell'd
 Me thus, though importune perhaps, to come
 And gaze, and worship thee of right declar'd
 Sovran of creatures, universal dame! »

So talked the spirited sly snake; and Eve,
 Yet more amaz'd, unwary thus replied:
 «Serpent, thy overpraising leaves in doubt
 The virtue of that fruit, in thee first prov'd:
 But say, where grows the tree? from hence how far?
 For many are the trees of God that grow
 In Paradise, and various, yet unknown
 To us; in such abundance lies our choice,
 As leaves a greater store of fruit untouch'd,
 Still hanging incorruptible, till men
 Grow up to their provision, and more hands
 Help to disburden Nature of her birth.»

To whom the wily adder, blithe and glad:
 «Empress, the way is ready, and not long;
 Beyond a row of myrtles, on a flat,
 Fast by a fountain, one small thicket past
 Of blowing myrrh and balm: if thou accept
 My conduct, I can bring thee thither soon.»
 «Lead then,» said Eve. He, leading, swiftly roll'd
 In tangles, and made intricate seem straight,
 To mischief swift. Hope elevates, and joy
 Brightens his crest. As when a wandering fire,
 Compact of unctuous vapour, which the night
 Condenses, and the cold environs round,
 Kindled through agitation to a flame,
 Which oft, they say, some evil spirit attends,
 Hovering and blazing with delusive light,
 Misleads the amaz'd night-wanderer from his way
 To bogs and mires, and oft through pond or pool;
 There swallow'd up and lost, from succour far:
 So glister'd the dire snake, and into fraud
 Led Eve, our credulous mother, to the tree
 Of prohibition, root of all our woe;
 Which, when she saw, thus to her guide she spake:
 «Serpent, we might have spar'd our coming hither,
 Fruitless to me, though fruit be here to excess,
 The credit of whose virtue rests with thee;
 Wondrous indeed, if cause of such effects.
 But of this tree we may not taste nor touch;

God so commanded, and left that command
Sole daughter of his voice: the rest, we live
Law to ourselves; our reason is our law.»

To whom the Tempter guilefully replied:
«Indeed! hath God then said that of the fruit
Of all these garden-trees ye shall not eat,
Yet lords declar'd of all in earth or air?»
To whom thus Eve, yet sinless: «Of the fruit
Of each tree in the garden we may eat:
But of the fruit of this fair tree amidst
The garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat
Thereof, nor shall ye touch it, lest ye die.»

She scarce had said, though brief, when now more bold
The Tempter, but with show of zeal and love
To man, and indignation at his wrong,
New part puts on; and as to passion mov'd
Fluctuates disturb'd, yet comely and in act
Rais'd, as of some great matter to begin.
As when of old some orator renown'd,
In Athens or free Rome, where eloquence
Flourish'd, since mute, to some great cause address'd
Stood in himself collected; while each part,
Motion, each act, won audience ere the tongue,
Sometimes in highth began, as no delay
Of preface brooking, through his zeal of right:
So standing moving, or to highth up-grown
The Tempter, all impassion'd, thus began:
«O sacred, wise, and wisdom-giving plant,
Mother of science! now I feel thy power
Within me clear; not only to discern
Things in their causes, but to trace the ways
Of highest agents, deem'd however wise.
Queen of this universe! do not believe
Those rigid threats of death; ye shall not die:
How should you? by the fruit? it gives you life
To knowledge; by the threatener? look on me,
Me, who have touch'd and tasted; yet both live,
And life more perfect have attain'd than fate
Meant me, by venturing higher than my lot.

Shall that be shut to man, which to the beast
 Is open? or will God incense his ire
 For such a petty trespass? and not praise
 Rather your dauntless virtue, whom the pain
 Of death denounc'd, whatever thing death be,
 Deterr'd not from achieving what might lead
 To happier life, knowledge of good and evil:
 Of good, how just? of evil, if what is evil
 Be real, why not known, since easier shunn'd?
 God therefore cannot hurt ye, and be just;
 Not just, not God; not fear'd then, nor obey'd;
 Your fear itself of death removes the fear.
 Why then was this forbid? Why, but to awe?
 Why, but to keep ye low and ignorant,
 His worshippers? He knows that in the day
 Ye eat thereof, your eyes that seem so clear,
 Yet are but dim, shall perfectly be then
 Open'd and clear'd, and ye shall be as gods,
 Knowing both, good and evil, as they know.
 That ye shall be as gods, since I as man,
 Internal man, is but proportion meet;
 I, of brute, human, ye, of human, gods
 So ye shall die perhaps, by putting off
 Human, to put on gods; death to be wish'd,
 Though threaten'd, which no worse than this can bring
 And what are gods, that man may not become
 As they, participating godlike food?
 The gods are first, and that advantage use
 On our belief, that all from them proceeds:
 I question it; for this fair earth I see,
 Warm'd by the sun, producing every kind;
 Them, nothing: if they all things, who enclos'd
 Knowledge of good and evil in this tree,
 That whoso eats thereof, forthwith attains
 Wisdom without their leave? and wherein lies
 The offence, that man should thus attain to know?
 What can your Knowledge hurt him, or this tree
 Impart against his will, if all be his?
 Or is it envy? and can envy dwell

In heavenly breasts? These, these, and many more
 Causes import your need of this fair fruit.
 Goddess humane, reach then, and freely taste.»

He ended; and his words, replete with guile,
 Into her heart too easy entrance won:
 Fix'd on the fruit she gaz'd, which to behold
 Might tempt alone; and in her ears the sound
 Yet rung of his persuasive words, impregn'd
 With reason, to her seeming, and with truth:
 Meanwhile the hour of noon drew on, and wak'd
 An eager appetite, rais'd by the smell
 So savoury of that fruit, which with desire,
 Inclinable now grown to touch or taste,
 Solicited her longing eye; yet first
 Pausing a while, thus to herself she mus'd:
 «Great are thy virtues, doubtless, best of fruits,
 Though kept from man, and worthy to be admir'd;
 Whose taste, too long forborn, at first assay
 Gave elocution to the mute, and taught
 The tongue not made for speech, to speak thy praise.
 Thy praise he also, who forbids thy use,
 Conceals not from us, naming thee the tree
 Of knowledge, knowledge both of good and evil;
 Forbids us then to taste! but his forbidding
 Commends thee more, while it infers the good
 By thee communicated, and our want:
 For good unknown sure is not had: or, had
 And yet unknown, is as not had at all.
 In plain then, what forbids he but to know,
 Forbids us good, forbids us to be wise?
 Such prohibitions bind not. But, if death
 Bind us with after-bands, what profits then
 Our inward freedom? In the day we eat
 Of this fair fruit, our doom is, we shall die!
 How dies the serpent? he hath eaten and lives,
 And knows, and speaks, and reasons, and discerns,
 Irrational till then. For us alone
 Was death invented? or to us denied
 This intellectual food, for hearts reserv'd?

For beasts it seems: yet that one beast which first
 Hath tasted envies not, but brings with joy
 The good befallen him, author unsuspect,
 Friendly to man, far from deceit or guile.
 What fear I then? rather, what know to fear
 Under this ignorance of good or evil,
 Of God or death, of law or penalty?
 Here grows the cure of all, this fruit divine,
 Fair to the eye, inviting to the taste,
 Of virtue to make wise; what hinders then
 To reach, and feed at once both body and mind?»
 So saying, her rash hand in evil hour
 Forth reaching to the fruit, she pluck'd, she ate.
 Earth felt the wound, and nature from her seat,
 Sighing through all her works, gave signs of woe,
 That all was lost. Back to the thicket slunk
 The guilty serpent; and well might; for Eve,
 Intent now only on her taste, nought else
 Regarded: such delight till then, as seem'd,
 In fruit she never tasted, whether true
 Or fancied so, through expectation high
 Of knowlege; nor was godhead from her thought
 Greedily she engorg'd without restraint,
 And knew not eating death: satiate at length,
 And heighten'd as wine, jocund and boon,
 Thus to herself she pleasingly began:
 «O sovran, virtuous, precious of all trees
 In Paradise! of operation blest
 To sapience, hitherto obscur'd, infam'd
 And thy fair fruit let hang, as to no end
 Created; but henceforth my early care,
 Not without song, each morning, and due praise,
 Shall tend thee, and the fertile burden ease
 Of thy full branches offer'd free to all;
 Till, dieted by thee, I grow mature
 In knowledge, as the gods, who all things know
 Though others envy what they cannot give:
 For had the gift been theirs, it had not here
 Thus grown. Experience, next, to thee I owe,

Best guide: not following thee, I had remain'd
 In ignorance; thou open'st wisdom's way,
 And givest access, though secret she retire.
 And I perhaps am secret; heaven is high,
 High, and remote to see from thence distinct
 Each thing on earth; and other care perhaps
 May have diverted from continual watch
 Our greater Forbidder, safe with all his spies
 About him. But to Adam in what sort
 Shall I appear? shall I to him make known
 As yet my change, and give him to partake
 Full happiness with me; or rather not,
 But keep the odds of knowledge in my power
 Without copartner? so to add what wants
 In female sex, the more to draw his love,
 And render me more equal; and perhaps
 A thing not undesirable, sometime
 Superior; for inferior, who is free?
 This may be well; but what if God have seen,
 And Death ensue? then I shall be no more!
 And Adam, wedded to another Eve,
 Shall live with her enjoying, I extinct;
 A Death to think! Confirm'd then I resolve,
 Adam shall share with me in bliss or woe:
 So dear I love him, that with him all deaths
 I could endure, without him live no life.»
 So saying from the tree her step she turn'd;
 But first low reverence done, as to the Power
 That dwelt within, whose presence had infus'd
 Into the plant sciential sap, deriv'd
 From nectar, drink of gods. Adam the while
 Waiting desirous her return, had wove
 Of choicest flowers a garland, to adorn
 Her tresses, and her rural labours crown;
 As reapers oft are wont their harvest queen.
 Great joy he promis'd to his thoughts, and new
 Solace in her return, so long delay'd:
 Yet oft his heart, divine of something ill,
 Misgave him; he the faltering measure felt;

And forth to meet her went, the way she took
 That morn when first they parted: by the tree
 Of knowledge he must pass; there he her met
 Scarce from the tree returning; in her hand
 A bough of fairest fruit, that downy smil'd
 New gather'd, and ambrosial smell diffus'd.
 To him she hasted; in her face excuse
 Came prologue, and apology too prompt;
 Which, with bland words at will, she thus addressed:
 Hast thou not wonder'd, Adam, at my stay?
 Thee I have miss'd, and thought it long depriv'd
 Thy presence; agony of love till now
 Not felt, nor shall be twice; for never more
 Mean I to try, what rash untried I sought,
 The pain of absence from thy sight. But strange
 Hath been the cause, and wonderful to hear:
 This tree is not, as we are told, a tree
 Of danger tasted, nor to evil unknown
 Opening the way, but of divine effect
 To open eyes, and make them gods who taste;
 And hath been tasted such: the serpent wise,
 Or not restrain'd as we, or not obeying,
 Hath eaten of the fruit; and is become
 Not dead, as we are threaten'd, but thenceforth
 Endued with human voice and human sense,
 Reasoning to admiration: and with me
 Persuasively hath so prevail'd, that I
 Have also tasted, and have also found
 The effects to correspond: opener mine eyes
 Dim erst, dilated spirits, ampler heart
 And growing up to Godhead; which for thee
 Chiefly I sought, without thee can despise.
 For bliss, as thou hast part, to me is bliss:
 Tedious, unshar'd with thee, and odious soon.
 Thou therefore also taste, that equal lot
 May join us, equal joy, as equal love;
 Lest, thou not tasting, different degree
 Disjoin us, and I then too late renounce
 Deity for thee, when fate will not permit.»

Thus Eve with countenance blithe her story told;
 But in her cheek distemper flushing glow'd.
 On the other side, Adam, soon as he heard
 The fatal trespass done by Eve, amaz'd,
 Astonied stood and blank, while horror chill
 Ran through his veins, and all his joints relax'd;
 From his slack hand the garland wreath'd for Eve
 Down dropt, and all the faded roses shed;
 Speechless he stood and pale, till thus at length
 First to himself he inward silence broke:

«O fairest of creation, last and best
 Of all God's works, creature in whom excell'd
 Whatever can to sight or thought be form'd,
 Holy, divine, good, amiable, or sweet!
 How art thou lost! how on a sudden lost,
 Defac'd, deflower'd, and now to death devote!
 Rather, how hast thou yielded to transgress
 The strict forbiddance, how to violate
 The sacred fruit forbidden! Some cursed fraud
 Of enemy hath beguil'd thee, yet unknown,
 And me with thee hath ruin'd: for with thee
 Certain my resolution is to die;
 How can I live without thee? how forego
 Thy sweet converse, and love so dearly join'd,
 To live again in these wild woods forlorn!
 Should God create another Eve, and I
 Another rib afford, yet loss of thee
 Would never from my heart: no, no! I feel
 The link of nature draw me: flesh of flesh,
 Bone of my bone thou art, and from thy state
 Mine never shall be parted, bliss or woe.»
 So having said, as one from sad dismay
 Recomforted, and after thoughts disturbed
 Submitting to what seem'd remediless,
 Thus in calm mood his words to Eve he turn'd:
 «Bold deed thou hast presum'd, adventurous Eve,
 And peril great provok'd, who thus hath dar'd,
 Had it been only coveting to eye
 That sacred fruit, sacred to abstinence,

Much more to taste it under ban to touch.
 But past who can recall, or done undo?
 Not God omnipotent, nor fate; yet so
 Perhaps thou shalt not die, perhaps the fact
 Is not so heinous now, foretasted fruit,
 Profan'd first by the serpent, by him first
 Made common, and unhallow'd, ere our taste:
 Nor yet on him found deadly; yet he lives,
 Lives, as thou said'st, and gains to live, as man,
 Higher degree of life: inducement strong
 To us, or likely tasting to attain
 Proportional ascent; which cannot be
 But to be gods, or angels, demi-gods.
 Nor can I think that God, Creator wise,
 Though threatening, will in earnest so destroy
 Us his prime creatures, dignified so high,
 Set over all his works; which in our fall,
 For us created, needs with us must fail,
 Dependent made; so God shall uncreate
 Be frustrate, do, undo, and labour lose;
 Not well conceiv'd of God, who, though his power
 Creation could repeat, yet would be loth
 Us to abolish, lest the adversary
 Triumph and say: «Fickle their state whom God
 Most favours; who can please him long? Me first
 He ruin'd, now mankind; when will he next?
 Matter of scorn; not to be given the foe.
 However I with thee have fix'd my lot
 Certain to undergo like doom: if death
 Consort with thee, death is to me as life;
 So forcible within my heart I feel
 The bond of nature draw me to my own;
 My own in thee, for what thou art is mine.
 Our state cannot be sever'd; we are one,
 One flesh! to lose thee were to lose myself.»
 So Adam; and thus Eve to him replied:
 «O glorious trial of exceeding love,
 Illustrious evidence, example high!
 Engaging me to emulate; but, short

Of thy perfection now shall I attain,
 Adam? from whose dear side I boast me sprung,
 And gladly of our union hear thee speak,
 One heart, one soul in both; whereof good proof
 This day affords, declaring thee resolv'd
 Rather than death, or aught than death more dread,
 Shall separate us, link'd in love so dear,
 To undergo with me one guilt, one crime,
 If any be, of tasting this fair fruit:
 Whose virtue (for of good still good proceeds,
 Direct or by occasion) hath presented
 This happy trial of thy love, which else
 So eminently never had been known?
 Were it I thought death menac'd would ensue
 This my attempt, I would sustain alone
 The worst, and not persuade thee, rather die
 Deserted, than oblige thee with a fact
 Pernicious to thy peace: chiefly assur'd
 Remarkably so late of thy so true,
 So faithful, love unequal'd: but I feel
 Far otherwise the event; not death, but life
 Augmented, open'd eyes; new hopes, new joys,
 Taste so divine, that what of sweet before
 Hath touch'd my sense, flat seems to this, and harsh.
 On my experience, Adam, freely taste,
 And fear of death deliver to the winds.»

So saying, she embrac'd him, and for joy
 Tenderly wept; much won, that he his love
 Had so ennobled, as of choice to incur
 Divine displeasure for her sake, or death.
 In recompense, (for such compliance bad
 Such recompense best merits,) from the bough
 Such gave him of that fair enticing fruit
 With liberal hand: he scrupled not to eat,
 Against his better knowledge; not deceiv'd,
 But fondly overcome with female charm.
 Earth trembled from her entrails, as again
 In pangs; and nature gave a second groan;
 Sky low'r'd; and muttering thunder, some sad drops

Wept at completing of the mortal sin
Original. . . .

Excelsior.

The shades of night were falling fast,
As through an Alpine village passed
A youth, who bare, 'mid snow and ice
A banner, with the strange device,
Excelsior!

His brow was sad; his eye beneath
Flashed like a falchion from its sheath:
And like a silver clarion rung
The accents of that unknown tongue,
Excelsior!

In happy homes he saw the light
Of household-fires gleam warm and bright;
Above the spectral glaciers shone,
And from his lips escaped a groan
Excelsior!

«Try not the Pass!» the old man said:
«Dark lowers the tempest overhead,
The roaring torrent is deep and wide!»
And loud that clarion voice replied,
Excelsior!

«O stay!» the maiden said, «and rest
Thy weary head upon this breast!»
A tear stood in his bright blue eye,
But still he answered with a sigh,
Excelsior!

«Beware the pine-tree's withered branch!
Beware the awful avalanche!»
This was the peasant's last good night!
A voice replied, far up the height,
Excelsior!

At break of day, as heavenward,
The pious monks of Saint Bernard

Uttered the oft-repeated prayer,
 A voice cried through the startled air,
 Excelsior!

A traveller, by the faithful hound,
 Half-buried, in the snow was found,
 Still grasping in his hand of ice
 That banner, with the strange device,
 Excelsior!

There in the twilight cold and gray,
 Lifeless, but beautiful he lay,
 And from the sky, serene and far,
 A voice fell, like a falling star,
 Excelsior!

LONGFELLOW.

II Penseroso.

Hence, vain deluding joys,
 The brood of Folly without father bred!
 How little joy bestead,
 Or fill the fixed mind with all your toys,
 Dwell in some idle brain,
 And fancies fond with gaudy shapes possess,
 As thick and numberless
 As the gay motes that people the sun-beams;
 Or likest hovering dreams,
 The fickle pensioners of Morpheus' train.
 But hail, thou goddess sage and holy,
 Hail, divinest Melancholy!
 Whose saintly visage is too bright
 To hit the sense of human sight,
 And therefore to our weaker view
 O'erlaid with black, staid Wisdom's hue;
 Black, but such as in esteem
 Prince Memnon's sister might beseem,
 Or that starr'd Ethiop queen that strove
 To set her beauty's praise above
 The sea-nymphs, and their powers offended.

Yet thou art higher far descended;
 Thee bright-hair'd Vesta, long of yore,
 To solitary Saturn bore;
 His daughter she; in Saturn's reign
 Such mixture was not held a stain:
 Oft in glimmering bowers and glades
 He met her, and in secret shades
 Of woody Ida's inmost grove,
 While yet there was no fear of Jove.

Come, pensive nun, devout and pure,
 Sober, steadfast, and demure,
 All in a robe of darkest grain,
 Flowing with majestic train,
 And sable stole of cypress lawn
 Over thy decent shoulders drawn,
 Come, but keep thy wonted state,
 With even step, and musing gait;
 And looks commercing with the skies,
 Thy rapt soul sitting in thine eyes:
 There, held in holy passion still,
 Forget thyself to marble, till
 With a sad leaden downward cast
 Thou fix them on the earth as fast;
 And join with thee calm Peace and Quiet,
 Spare fast, that oft with gods doth diet,
 And hears the Muses in a ring
 Aye round about Jove's altar sing:
 And add to these retired Leisure,
 That in trim gardens takes his pleasure.
 But first and chiefest, with thee bring,
 Him that yon soars on golden wing,
 Guiding the fiery-wheeled throne,
 The Cherub Contemplation;
 And the mute Silence hist along,
 'Less Philomel will deign a song,
 In her sweetest saddest plight,
 Smoothing the rugged brow of Night,
 While Cynthia checks her dragon yoke,
 Gently o'er the accustom'd oak:

Most musical, most melancholy!
 Thee, chantress, oft, thee woods among,
 I woo, to hear thy even-song;
 And, missing thee, I walk unseen
 On the dry smooth-shaven green,
 To behold the wandering moon,
 Riding near her highest noon,
 Like one that had been led astray
 Through the heaven's wide pathless way,
 And oft, as if her head she bow'd,
 Stooping through a fleecy cloud.

Oft, on a plat of rising ground,
 I heard the far-off curfew sound,
 Over some wide water'd shore,
 Swinging slow with sullen roar;
 Or, if the air will not permit,
 Some still removed place will fit,
 Where glowing embers through the room
 Teach light to counterfeit a gloom:
 Far from all resort of mirth,
 Save the cricket on the hearth,
 Or the bellman's drowsy charm,
 To bless the doors from nightly harm.

Or let my lamp, at midnight hour,
 Be seen in some high lonely tower,
 Where I may oft out-watch the Bear
 With thrice-great Hermes, or unsphere
 The spirit of Plato, to unfold
 What worlds or what vast regions hold
 The immortal mind, that hath forsook
 Her mansion in this fleshly nook:
 And of those demons that are found
 In fire, air, flood, or underground,
 Whose power hath a true consent
 With planet or with element.
 Sometimes let gorgeous Tragedy
 In sceptred pall come sweeping by,
 Presenting Thebes, or Pelops' line,
 Or the tale of Troy divine;

Or what (though rare) of later age
Ennobled hath the buskin'd stage.

But, O sad virgin, that thy power
Might raise Musæus from his bower,
Or bid the soul of Orpheus sing
Such notes as, warbled to the string,
Drew iron tears from Pluto's cheek,
And made hell grant what love did seek,
Or call up him that left half-told
The story of Cambusean bold,
Of Camball, and of Algarsife,
And who had Canace to wife,
That own'd the virtuous ring and glass,
And of the wondrous horse of brass,
On which the Tartar king did ride:
And if aught else great bards beside
In sage and solemn tunes have sung,
Of turneys, and of trophies hung,
Of forests, and enchantments drear,
Where more is meant than meets the ear.

Thus, Night, oft see me in thy pale career,
Till civil-suited Morn appear,
Not trick'd and frounc'd as she was wont
With the Attic boy to hunt,
But kerchief'd in a comely cloud,
While rocking winds are piping loud,
Or usher'd with a shower still,
When the gust hath blown his fill,
Ending on the rustling leaves,
With minute drops from off the eaves.
And when the sun begins to fling,
His flaring beams, me, goddess, bring
To arched walks of twilight groves,
And shadows brown, that Sylvan loves,
Of pine, or monumental oak,
Where the rude ax, with heaved stroke,
Was never heard the nymphs to daunt,
Or fright them from their hallow'd haunt.
There in close covert by some brook,

Where no profaner eye may look,
 Hide me from day's garish eye,
 While the bee with honied thigh,
 That at her flowery work doth sing,
 And the waters murmuring,
 With such concert as they keep,
 Entice the dewy-feather'd sleep;
 And let some strange mysterious dream
 Wave at his wings in aery stream
 Of lively portraiture display'd,
 Softly on my eyelids laid.
 And, as I wake, sweet music breathe
 Above, about, or underneath,
 Sent by some spirit, to mortals good,
 Or the unseen genius of the wood.

But let my due feet never fail
 To walk the studious cloister's pale
 And love the high-embowed roof,
 With antique pillars massy proof
 And storied windows richly dight,
 Casting a dim religious light:
 There let the pealing organ blow
 To the full-voic'd quire below,
 In service high, and anthems clear,
 As may with sweetness, through mine ear,
 Dissolve me into ecstasies,
 And bring all heaven before mine eyes.

And may at last my weary age
 Find out the peaceful hermitage,
 The hairy gown and mossy cell,
 Where I may sit and rightly spell
 Of every star that heaven doth shew,
 And every herb that sips the dew;
 Till old experience do attain
 To something like prophetic strain.

These pleasures, Melancholy, give,
 And I with thee will choose to live.

MILTON.

Ode on the death of a young Lady.

Untimely gone! for ever fled!
 The roses of the cheek so red,
 The affection warm, the temper mild,
 The sweetness, that in sorrow smil'd.
 Alas! the cheek where beauty glow'd,
 The heart where goodness overflow'd,
 A cloud amid the valley lies
 And «dust to dust» the mourner cries.
 O, from thy kindred early torn
 And to thy grave untimely born!
 Vanish'd for ever from my view,
 Thou sister of my soul, adieu!
 Fair, with my first ideas twin'd,
 Thine image oft' will meet my mind;
 And while remembrance brings thee near
 Affection sad will drop a tear,
 How oft' does sorrow bend the head
 Before we dwell among the dead,
 Scarce in the years of manly prime
 I've oft'n wept the racks of time.
 What tragic tears bedew the eye!
 What deaths we suffer ere we die!
 Our brok'n friendships we deplore
 And loves of youth that are no more!
 No after friendship e'er can raise
 Th' endearments of our early days;
 Nor e'er the heart such fondness prove
 As when it first began to love.
 Affection dies and vernal flower;
 And love the blossom of an hour,
 The spring of fancy ear's control,
 And mar the beauty of the soul.
 Vers'd in the commerce of deceit,
 How soon the heart forgets to beat!
 The blood runs cold at Int'rest' call,
 They look with equal eyes on all.

Ye gods, whatever ye withhold
 Let my affection ne'er grow old,
 Ne'er may the glow humane depart
 Nor Nature yield to frigid Art!
 Still may the gen'rous bosom burn
 Though doom'd to bleed o'er beauty's turn;
 And still the friendly face appear
 Though moisten'd with a tender tear.

LOGAN.

The Burial of Sir John Moore.

Not a drum was heard, not a funeral note,
 As his corse to the rampart we hurried;
 Not a soldier discharged his farewell shot
 O'er the grave where our hero we buried.
 We buried him darkly at dead of night,
 The sods with our bayonets turning;
 By the struggling moon-beams' misty light,
 And the lantern dimly burning.
 No useless coffin enclosed his breast,
 Not in sheet or in shroud we wound him;
 But he lay like a warrior taking his rest,
 With his martial cloak around him.
 Few and short were the prayers we said,
 And we spoke not a word of sorrow;
 But we steadfastly gazed on the face of the dead,
 And we bitterly thought of the morrow.
 We thought, as we hollow'd his narrow bed,
 And smooth'd down his lonely pillow,
 That the foe and the stranger would tread o'er his head,
 And we far away on the billow!
 Lightly they'll talk of the spirit that's gone,
 And o'er his cold ashes upbraid him, —
 But little he'll reck, if they let him sleep on
 In the grave where a Briton has laid him.
 But half our heavy task was done
 When the clock struck the hour of retiring;
 And we heard by the distant and random gun,
 That the foe was sullenly firing.

Slowly and sadly we laid him down,
 From the field of his fame fresh and gory;
 We carved not a line, and we raised not a stone,
 But left him alone with his glory!

WOLFE.

On Prayer.

Prayer is the soul's sincere desire,
 Utter'd or unexpress'd;
 The motion of a hidden fire
 That trembles in the breast.

Prayer is the burden of a sigh,
 The falling of a tear;
 The upward glancing of an eye,
 When none but God is near.

Prayer is the simplest form of speech,
 That infant lips can try;
 Prayer the sublimest strain that reach
 The Majesty on high.

Prayer is the Christian's vital breath,
 The Christian's native air;
 His watchward at the gates of death:
 He enters heaven by prayer.

Prayer is the contrite sinner's voice,
 Returning from his ways:
 While angels in their songs rejoice,
 And say, « Behold he prays! »

In prayer on earth the Saints are one;
 They're one in word and mind,
 When with the Father and his Son
 Sweet fellowship they find.

No prayer is made on earth alone:
 The Holy Spirit pleads;
 And Jesus, on the eternal throne,
 For sinners intercedes.

O, Thou, by whom we come to God;
 The Life, the Truth, the Way,
 The path of prayer thyself hast trod;
 Lord, teach us how to pray!

J. MONTGOMERY.

The Ocean.

There is a pleasure in the pathless woods,
 There is a rapture on the lonely shore,
 There is a society, where none intrudes,
 By the deep Sea, and music in its roar:
 I love not Man the less, but Nature more,
 From these our interviews, in which I steal
 From all I may be, or have been before,
 To mingle with the universe, and feel
 What I can ne'er express, yet cannot all conceal.
 Roll on, thou deep and dark blue Ocean—roll!
 Ten thousand fleets sweep over thee in vain;
 Man marks the earth with ruin—his control
 Stops with the shore;—upon the watery plain
 The wrecks are all thy deed, nor doth remain
 A shadow of man's ravage, save his own,
 When, for a moment, like a drop of rain,
 He sinks into thy depths, with bubbling groan
 Without a grave, unknell'd, uncoffin'd, and unknown.
 His steps are not upon thy path,—thy fields
 Are not a spoil for him,—thou dost arise
 And shake him from thee; the vile strength he wields
 For earth's destruction thou dost all despise,
 Spurning him from thy bosom to the skies,
 And send'st him, shivering in the playful spray
 And howling, to his gods, where haply lies
 His petty hope in some near port or bay
 And dashest him again to earth:—there let him lay.
 The armaments whose thunders strike the walls
 Of rock-built cities, bidding nations quake,
 And monarchs tremble in their capitals,

The oak leviathans, whose huge ribs make
 Their clay creator the vain title take
 Of Lord of thee, and arbiter of war;
 These are thy toys, and, as the snowy flake,
 They melt into thy yeast of waves, which mar
 Alike the Armada's pride, or spoils of Trafalgar.
 Thy shores are empires, changed in all save thee —
 Assyria, Greece, Rome, Carthage, what are they?
 Thy waters wasted them, while they were free,
 And many a tyrant since; their shores obey
 The stranger, slave or savage; their decay
 Has dried up realms to deserts: — not so thou;
 Unchangeable, save to thy wild waves' play,
 Time writes no wrinkle on thine azure brow:
 Such as Creation's dawn beheld, thou rollest now.
 Thou glorious mirror, where the Almighty's form
 Glosses itself in tempests; in all time,
 Calm or convulsed — in breeze, or gale, or storm,
 Icing the pole, or in the torrid clime
 Dark heaving; — boundless, endless, and sublime,
 The image of Eternity — the throne
 Of the Invisible; ev'n from out thy slime
 The monsters of the deep are made; each zone
 Obeys thee; thou goest forth, dread, fathomless, alone.

BYRON.

CARTAS.

Billetes. Esquelas.

 ESQUELAS DE CONVITE.

(Forma de ceremonia.)

El Señor y la Señora B. presentan sus respetos al Señor y la Señora D., y les suplican que les hagan el honor de ir á comer con ellos el juéves á las seis.

LETTERS.

Cards.

 CARDS OF INVITATION.

(Ceremonial form).

Mr. and Mrs. B. present their most respectful compliments to Mr. and Mrs. D., and request the honour of their company to dinner on Thursday, at six o'clock.

Respuesta.

El Señor y la Señora D. se apresurarán á acudir al amable convite del Señor y la Señora B., y les presentan sus respetuosos cumplidos.

(Forma atenta.)

El Señor y la Señora C. ruegan al Señor y la Señora A., que se sirvan comer con ellos el mártes próximo á las cinco, y les presentan sus finos recuerdos.

Respuesta.

El Señor y la Señora A. tendrán el honor de acudir al convite del Señor y la Señora C., y les presentan sus sinceros cumplidos.

(Forma familiar.)

El Señor y la Señora B. suplican al Señor P., que les haga el gusto de ir á comer con ellos, el miércoles próximo, á las seis, y le renuevan sus atentas expresiones.

Respuesta.

El Señor P. acepta el convite del Señor y la Señora B., y les envía mil afectuosos recuerdos.

Querido amigo: Si no está V. comprometido para mañana, venga V. á comer con nosotros

Answer.

Mr. and Mrs. D. present their respects to Mr. and Mrs. B., and will do themselves the honour of accepting their kind invitation.

(Polite form).

Mr. and Mrs. C. present their compliments to Mr. and Mrs. A., and request the favour of their company to dinner on Tuesday next, at five.

Answer.

Mr. and Mrs. A. present their compliments to Mr. and Mrs. C., and will be happy to accept their invitation.

(Friendly form).

Mr. and Mrs. B.'s best compliments to Mr. P., and hope for the pleasure of his company to dinner on Wednesday next, at six o'clock.

Answer.

Mr. P.'s best compliments to Mr. and Mrs. B., and accepts their kind invitation.

My Dear Mr.—, In case you have no previous engagement, will you come and dine with us

sin ceremonia. Mi mujer y yo tendremos sumo gusto en que sea V. de los nuestros.

Queda de V. afectísimo etc.

morrow-without ceremony? Mrs. F., and I shall be very happy to see you.

Believe me yours etc.

Querido amigo: tendré el gusto de aprovechar su amable convite de V. y de renovarle, igualmente que á su Señora, mis sentimientos de sincera amistad.

De V. afectísimo.

My dear Friend, I accept your invitation with great pleasure, and to present my best acknowledgments to Mrs. A., and yourself.

Yours truly etc.

Rechusar un convite.

El Señor B. está comprometido hace muchos dias para el miércoles y suplica al Señor P., que le dispense y no dude de que lo siente mucho.

Pedir una entrevista.

El Señor N. tiene que comunicar al Señor S. un asunto de interés y le ruega que le indique el dia y la hora en que podrá pasar á su casa. Espera que el Señor S. se servirá perdonarle esta importunidad.

Querido amigo: acabo de llegar de Paris; si sus ocupaciones de V. le permiten pasarse por mi casa, le daré noticias que le causarán placer. Todo el dia estaré en casa; con que así puede V. elegir su hora.

Declining an invitation.

Mr. B's. compliments to Mr. P., and is very sorry that a previous engagement for Wednesday next will prevent his having the honour of waiting upon him that day.

Asking an interview.

Mr. N's. compliments to Mr. S., and desires to know the day and hour he may call upon him, having something of great consequence to acquaint him with. Mr. N. hopes that Mr. S. will excuse his importunity.

My dear Friend, I have just arrived from Paris; if you are at leisure to give me a call, I will tell you some news that will please you. I shall be at home the whole day, so that you may choose your hour.

Para disculparse.

El Señor P., teniendo que ir mañana al campo, ruega al Señor V., que no se tome la molestia de pasarse por su casa. El Señor P. tendrá sumo placer en ver al Señor V., pasado mañana á la hora que guste.

La Señora O., teniendo que ir esta noche á un baile, no podrá tener el placer de ver hoy al Señor H., le suplica que se sirva no venir hasta mañana á las once y le renueva sus cumplidos.

Para mercaderes; obreros.

Suplico al Señor B. que se pase por mi casa el mártes por la mañana á las diez y traiga muestras de diferentes especies de...

Ruego al Señor N., que venga á mi casa mañana por la mañana para tomarme medida de un frac.

Para pedir cartas de Recomendacion.

Muy Señor mio: dentro de pocos dias salgo para Londres, ¿tendria V. la bondad de darme cartas de recomendacion para

Excusing one'sself.

Mr. P., finding himself obliged to go into the country to-morrow, desires Mr. V. not to give himself the trouble of calling upon him. Mr. P. will be very glad to see Mr. V. the day after to-morrow, at any hour which will be most convenient to him.

Mrs. O. presents her compliments to Mr. H. As she is going this evening to a ball, she cannot have the pleasure of seeing him to-day, and desires Mr. H., to be so kind as not to come till to-morrow at eleven o'clock.

To tradesmen; workmen etc.

Mr. D. desires Mr. B. to call on Tuesday morning at ten o'clock, and to bring patterns of different kinds of...

Mr. B. wishes Mr. N. to call to-morrow morning in order to take his measure for a coat.

Asking letters of Recommendation.

Sir; as I intend to set off in a few days for London, may I beg you to give me letters of recommendation to Mr. X.,

el Señor X.? Me haria V. un gran servicio. which will be very useful to me?

A un banquero á quien va uno dirigido. *To a banker to whom you are recommended.*

Muy Señor mio: ruego á V. que se sirva indicarme el dia y la hora en que podré pasar por su casa para entregarle unas cartas de recomendacion que dirige á V. para mí el Señor F. de Paris. Sir, I wish you would be so good as to let me know the day and hour I may call upon you, in order to present you the letters of recommendation that Mr. F. of Paris gave me for your house. I have the honour

Quedo de V., caballero, su mas atento y seguro servidor

Q. B. S. M.

to be, Sir,

Your most obedient,

HUMBLE SERVANT.

LETRAS DE CAMBIO.

BILLS OF EXCHANGE.

Valga por 300 libras.

For £ 300.

Londres 1 de enero de 1857.

London, January 1, 1857.

A la vista mandará V. pagar por esta primera de cambio al Señor N. la suma de trescientas libras esterlinas, valor recibido de contado ó en géneros, que anotará V. en nuestra cuenta corriente, segun aviso de etc.

Sir, at sight, please to pay by this first bill of exchange to Mr. N., the sum of three hundred pounds for value received of him in cash, or in goods, and place it to account as per advice.

From your etc.

Al Señor P., del Comercio de Paris.

To Mr. P., merchant, Paris.

Manchester 13 de julio de 1856.

Manchester, July 13, 1856.

Muy Señor mio: con esta fecha giro contra V. una suma de cincuenta luises, pagadera

Sir I have this day drawn on you for fifty louis, payable at sight to Mr. N., for value re-

á la vista al Señor N. valor recibido del mismo. Ruego á V. que la satisfaga y me la adeude en cuenta; y esperándolo así de su puntualidad, queda de V. su etc.

ceived of him. I beg you will honour it and place it to my account; which expecting from your punctuality, I am, Sir, your etc.

Al Sr. S., banquero en Liverpool.

To Mr. S. banker, Liverpool.

Valga por 500 francos.

For F.^{rs} 500.

Milan 5 de marzo de 1854.

Milan, march 5, 1854.

Muy Señor mio: á treinta dias vista servirá V. mandar pagar por esta sola letra de cambio al Señor R., ó á su órden, la suma de quinientos francos, valor recibido del mismo en géneros que sentará V. en nuestra cuenta segun aviso de su etc.

Sir, thirty days after sight, you will please to pay by this sole bill of exchange to Mr. R., or order, the sum of five hundred francs for value received of him in goods, and place it to account as per advice from your etc.

Al Sr. N., del comercio de Lion.

To Mr. N., merchant, Lyons.

RECIBOS.

RECEIPTS.

Yo infrascrito reconozco haber recibido del Señor Boll, la suma de dos mil francos que le habia prestado segun su promesa del 6 de Julio último, que por lo tanto he entregado al presente en manos del Señor Boll, como desempeñado.

I, the underwritten, declare to have received of Mr. Boll the sum of two thousand francs which I had lent him according to his promissary note of the sixth of last July; which on this account I now return into the hands of the said Mr. Boll as discharged.

Paris, 6 Diciembre, 1856.

Paris, December 6, 1856.

CARTAS DE COMERCIO. COMMERCIAL LETTERS.

Muy Señores nuestros: con la esperanza de aumentar el número de nuestros corresponsales en Francia, hemos suplicado á varios de nuestros amigos que nos hagan conocer las casas de ese país con las que podríamos negociar con toda seguridad; y como nos han respondido de la probidad de Vds. y de las buenas comisiones que dan para la venta y compra de varios géneros, suplicamos á Vds. que acepten nuestros servicios que les ofrecemos en toda ocasion, consistiendo nuestro principal comercio en la compra y venta de...

Nos lisonjamos de que, cuando conozcan Vds. nuestro modo de comerciar y mirar por los intereses de nuestros amigos, se prestarán gustosos á continuar una correspondencia que puede sernos igualmente útil y ventajosa. Vds. por su parte pueden tomar de quien gusten informes acerca de nuestra casa: estamos persuadidos de que nadie podrá con justicia ponernos en mal lugar.

Esperamos que nos honrarán Vds. con sus comisiones; pueden Vds. estar persuadidos de nuestra atención y de nuestra vigilancia en servirlos bien,

Gentlemen, with the hope of enlarging the number of our correspondents in France, we have desired several of our friends to inform us of the different houses of that country with which we might negotiate with safety; and as they have convinced us of your integrity and of the good commissions which you give for the sale and purchase of various goods, we desire you to accept our services, which we offer you upon all occasions, our principal commerce consisting in buying and selling... etc.

We flatter ourselves that when you are acquainted with our method of trading and managing the concerns of our friends you will readily consent to the carrying on of a correspondence that may be equally useful and advantageous to both parties. On our part you may inquire of whom you please, concerning our house; we are persuaded that no person can, with justice, speak to our disadvantage.

We hope that you will honour us with your commissions; you may be assured of our attention and vigilance to serve you well, wishing nothing more

siendo nuestro mayor deseo probarles la perfecta consideracion con que tenemos el honor de ser

than to convince you of the perfect esteem, with which we have the honour to be, Gentlemen,

de Vds.

Your very humble servants.

muy atentos y seguros servidores.

Respuesta.

Answer.

Muy Señores nuestros: en respuesta á la favorecida de Vds. de 1.º de enero último, les diremos que nos lisonjea infinito el ventajoso concepto en que nos tienen. Aprovechamos con mucho gusto la ocasion de entablar conocimiento mas particular con Vds. sin que nos sea necesario tomar mas informes; y en presentándose ocasion, nos valdremos de las ofertas que tienen Vds. la bondad de hacernos.

Gentlemen, In answer to your favour of the 1st of January last, we inform you, that we are infinitely pleased with the favourable opinion you have entertained of us. We embrace with a sensible pleasure the opportunity of cultivating a more particular acquaintance with you, Gentlemen, being under no necessity to make further inquiry; and when opportunities occur we shall avail ourselves of your obliging offers.

Aseguramos á Vds. que por el momento nuestras comisiones no son muy considerables, porque hace tanto tiempo que el comercio decae y sobre todo desde los alborotos del año pasado, que nada nos atrevemos á emprender. Ahora, para dar márgen á una correspondencia que en lo sucesivo puede ser ventajosa, tengan Vds. la bondad de enviarnos el precio corriente de... Por poco que nos dejen Vds. entrever la esperanza de un feliz resultado les

We assure you that at present our commissions are very small; for trade has languished so long; and especially since the disturbances of last year, that we durst not attempt anything. In order, however, to commence a correspondence which in process of time may prove advantageous, be so kind as to send the price current of... How little prospect soever you may afford us of a fortunate issue we shall dispatch you... to let you know the wish, we have, of being

mandaremos á Vds., ...para manifestarles el deseo que nos anima de que nos cuenten en el número de sus amigos.

Rogamos á Vds. que nos honren con sus órdenes en todas las ocasiones en que podamos servirlos, asegurándoles en un todo

among the number of your friends.

We desire you to honour us with your orders on all occasions in which it will be in our power to do you service, assuring you that we are very perfectly,

YOUR MOST HUMBLE SERVANTS.

sus mas atentos y SS.

Q. B. S. M.

A PRACTICAL MERCANTILE CORRESPONDENCE.

A COLLECTION OF
LETTERS OF BUSINESS.

CIRCULARS.

Messrs. Ranson & Co.

Paris 1st Jan. 1864.

GENTLEMEN,— We beg to acquaint you that we have opened a house of general agency at N...., under the firm of Young, Forbes & Co.: the two senior members have been some years established at N. in the same line, under the firm of Young and Forbes.

It is our intention to confine ourselves to commission business; and we venture to solicit you countenance, assuring you that the strictest attention shall be paid to the management of any affairs which you may think proper to entrust to our care.

We hope it will justify our confidence in addressing you, that we are enabled to refer to the annexed list of commercial friends, comprising houses of the first eminence both in Eu-

rope and India, on whose consideration and support we have the advantage of being permitted to rely.

The signature of the only member at present in England is subjoined; those of the resident partners will be given in a circular from N.... We are, etc.

Mr. A. B. will sign

YOUNG, FORBES & Co.

B. March Esq.^{re} *London.*

Birmingham Jan. 1st 1864.

Sir, — Referring to our circular of the 10th July last, addressed to you, on the demise of Mr. Hugh Tredwin, senior partner in our late firm Harrison & Tredwin, we have now the pleasure of intimating that articles of co-partnership, commencing this day, have been entered into between Mr. John Harrison, the surviving partner; Mr. Hugh Wilcox, of golden Square, London; and Mr. Alfred Strange; a gentleman who has been for many years our confidential clerk. Accordingly the business of the house will henceforth be conducted under the firm of Harrison, Wilcox, & Co. We trust this arrangement will not only meet your approbation, but also ensure your entire confidence.

In the name of our old firm, we tender you our best thanks for your past favour and support; and, on behalf of our present establishment we beg to assure you, that our earnest endeavours shall be used, on all occasions, to promote the interests of our constituents, by a faithful execution of their commissions.

Requesting your attention to the signature of the two resident partners, we subscribe ourselves, respectfully, your obedient servants.

Mr. Harrison will sign,

HARRISON, WILCOX & Co.

Mr. Strange will sign,

HARRISON, WILCOX & Co.

HARRISON, WILCOX & Co.

John Butler Esquire, *Liverpool.*

London 1st July 1863.

Sir, — We beg to apprise you that, being desirous of rewarding the faithful and valuable services of Mr. John Hawks-

ford, who has been our confidential clerk for many years past, we shall from and after the 31st instant, admit him to a share in our business, altering our firm to *Brown, Trant & Co.*; and we request your attention, accordingly, to these signatures of the respective partners annexed.

Encouraging the hope that, under our new firm we shall continue to receive proofs of your confidence and good-will, and with sincere thanks for the many past favours we have received at your hands, we remain, Sir, your very faithful servants,

| | | |
|---------------------|---|--------------------|
| <i>Signature of</i> | | |
| George Brown, | — | BROWN, TRANT & Co. |
| Dominic Trant. | — | BROWN, TRANT & Co. |
| John Hawksford. | — | BROWN, TRANT & Co. |

LETTER OF CREDIT.

Messrs. James Bradshaw & Son, *London.*

Liverpool 16th July 1863.

Gentlemen,—I take the liberty of opening a credit with you in favour of the bearer, Mr. William Ashly. Any sum of money that this gentleman may require, to the extent of fifteen hundred pounds sterling, be pleased to advance on my account, either against his receipt, or his draft on me to your order, as may be most agreeable to yourselves. I am, etc.

B. BETHEL.

GENERAL CORRESPONDENCE.

John Pelletier Esq. *Paris.*

London 12th February 1864.

Sir, In pursuance of the orders given to my friends at Liverpool, as I advised you under date of the 20th ult., they have shipped to your address thirty bags Maranham cotton of excellent quality, by the "Ann", Captain James Mall, to Havre. Inclosed I have now the pleasure to wait on you with invoice and duplicate bill of lading of this shipment; the former amounting to £ 216 12s. 8d., which sum I hope you will be able

to realize, together with a fair profit; and as quick returns are the life of trade, I shall expect that you will, ere long, be enabled to remit me the net proceeds in a good bill on some of your friends in this city. I do not limit you as to price, being well assured that you will effect the best sales your market will allow. I remain etc.

JOSEPH CHITTY.

Joseph Chitty. Esq. *London.*

Paris 15th February 1864.

Sir, — I received, in due course, your favour of the 20th ult., apprizing me that you purposed to make me a consignment; to which letter I deferred replying, in expectation of learning that you had carried your kind intention into effect, as I have now the satisfaction to know from your favour of the 12th instant, as also by advices from our common friends Messrs. Wiseman and Co., of Liverpool; from whom, by the "Ann", arrived at Havre, I have received a bill of lading for thirty bags of Maranham cotton by that vessel. I shall offer this parcel to our buyers as soon as landed; and I have no doubt I shall be able to remit you a very fair per centage on your invoice of £ 216 12s. 8d., since our market for this article is very brisk: indeed, all descriptions of cotton are in good demand, with some prospect of an advance in prices, of which circumstance I shall take care to avail myself in the sale of yours. I would not, however, recommend delay, for when the state of our market is known on your side, no doubt we shall have large importations from thence, though, for your government, we do not hear of any expected arrivals from North or South America.

As I shall shortly have this pleasure again, I have only now to add that your interests will, at all times, command my best attention, and I beg to assure you that nothing shall be left undone on my part, to extend our correspondence, to our mutual advantage. I remain, most sincerely, Sir, your obliged and obedient humble servant,

JOH. PELLETIER.

Francis Gilpin Esq. *London.**Cadix, 5th April 1864.*

Sir, — You will please to effect insurance for my account of £ 1,500 on one fourth part or share of the ship "Ocean", Captain B. Bosch, from Pernambuco to this city, against all risks, and at the lowest premium possible, not exceeding, however, 10 per cent. I expect that she will sail under convoy of a ship of war; therefore you will be so good as to stipulate for a return of premium accordingly. It was intended that she should sail within three weeks from the date of my last advices of the 3^d January. You may draw on me as usual for the amount of premium and charges. I remain very truly, Sir, your obedient humble servant.

MANUEL ONETO.

Manuel Oneto Esq. *Cadix.**London 15 April 1864.*

Sir, — Agreeably to the order contained in your favour of the 5th ult., I have effected insurance on your fourth share of the "Ocean", Captain B. Bosch, from Pernambuco to your port; say £ 1,500 as per copy of policy and account annexed, at 8 guineas per cent., to return £ 4 per cent. if she sails under convoy of a man of war and arrives. I have taken the liberty of valuing on you, under this date, to my own order for £ 138 6s. 6d., the cost of this insurance at the exchange of 57 $\frac{1}{4}$ per milrea, and at sixty days' sight; which draft I am certain will meet due honour.

Should you wish me to guarantee the under-writers, I am ready to do so for $\frac{1}{2}$ per cent. *del credere*, And in that case you will please to inform my friends in your city, Messrs. A. and F. de Laussat, of your wish, and pay them the sum of £ 7 10s. at the exchange above quoted; when the risk of failure, or non-payment by the underwriters in case of loss will be mine; otherwise, that risk remains your own.

Always anxious to receive your orders, and determined to execute them in the most punctual and advantageous manner in my power, I remain, faithfully, Sir, your obedient and humble servant,

FRANCIS GILPIN.

John Eyre, Esq. *London.*

Plymouth, 12 March 1864.

Sir, — You will be so good as to cause the following to be insured in London at the lowest premium possible, and not exceeding — the first, six and a half guineas per cent., the second 40s.; at which we could have effected them here; but we have no doubt you will be able to succeed at lower premiums. Say 1st L \$. 175 on 100 bags of rice from Maranham to Oporto, by the “Senhora da Agonia”, Captain Luis Pereira, marked A 1 to 100. The ship to sail on or about the 10th October.

2nd Rs. 20,000 ff. 000 at the exchange of 72*d.* on two fifths of the cargo of the “Wellington”, Captain James Morrogh, from Bahia to Hamburg, to sail the beginning of the present month. Particulars to be furnished hereafter.

Relying on your executing this order to the best of your ability, and requesting you to carry the amount of both to our debit in account, we remain as always, Sir, your obedient humble servants,

JOS. BERKELEY & Co.

Messrs. Marais & Co., *Paris.*

London, 6th July 1863.

Gentlemen, — Since the receipt of your letter of the 1st April, respecting the credit for £ 700 in favour of J. G. Ross, nothing has occurred to occasion my troubling you; but this morning, to my surprise, a bill of exchange for £ 700 has been presented, purporting to be drawn by Mr. Ross, at three months' date, from the 2^d June, and in favour of Messrs. Marais & Co., but indorsed «Marais & Co.,» apparently in your hand-writing. Mr. Ross having written to me on the very day on which this bill is dated, and subsequently from Havre, under date of the 25th ult., without mentioning his having drawn such a bill (though of course I expected he would do so), or having given any advice whatever of his having made use of the credit, I have thought it prudent to withhold my acceptance until I hear from you, whether you have negotiated this bill or not;

for in these times, when forgeries are so frequent, and fraudulent practices of such common occurrence, the utmost caution is required in transactions of this nature. If Mr. Ross drew this bill, it is an unpardonable oversight, or an inexcusable neglect on his part, that he did not give me the necessary advice, in the letters alluded to. I believe he is still at Havre and I wrote to him on the 2nd inst. respecting this transaction. On receiving his or your answer, I shall of course honour the draft. I remain always, gentlemen, your obedient humble servant,

JAMES BERTRAN.

James Bertran, Esq., *London.*

Paris, 9th July 1863.

Sir, — The bill of exchange for £ 700 to which you allude in your favour of the 6th instant was drawn by the gentleman who brought us your letter of credit on that amount; and the signature, "J. G. Ross," is his, he having signed the draft in our office. We trust, therefore, that on your receiving this assurance all will be correct, and all responsibility removed from our indorsement. We cannot account for Mr. Ross's neglect in regard to the advice of his draft, but presume that he will be able to explain this irregularity to your satisfaction. We remain, Sir, your devoted and obedient servants,

MARAI & Co.

Messrs. Marais & Co., *Paris.*

London, 10th July 1863.

Gentlemen, — The explanation contained in your much valued favour of the 9th inst. is perfectly satisfactory; and, of course all doubts as to the identity of Mr. Ross's draft for £ 700 are removed. Having now accepted this bill in the regular way, you may consider your responsibility at an end. Regretting the trouble you have had in this transaction, I remain, Gentlemen, your obedient humble servant,

JAMES BERTRAN.

FAMILIAR CORRESPONDENCE.

Old Coust, Dec. 28, 1862.

My Dear B...

I am sorry to say that the little attention I have paid your divine language since leaving the classic shades of St. Mary's puts it out of my power to address you in the style of Schiller or Goethe, the unpronounceable. Your last letter was certainly rather obscure; but this must, I suppose, be attributed to the metaphysical love with which the German spirit loves to cram itself. — I should have thought M. had left for Manchester long ago; yet perhaps he fears the colder climate of the metropolis of cotton-land might disturb the smoothness of the face he spends so much time in adapting to civilized life. You said nothing about B., but he must have left; if I remember right, he used to afford you no little amusement. You must be, in the language of this exterior world, "no end of a swell," teaching as you do all the living tongues of Western Europe; and enjoying the reputation of knowing, heaven knows, how many dead ones.

What between the marching of troops, the calling to arms, the very din of battle all over the country, it is almost impossible to turn to sober pursuits. — A propos of the war, did you see the complimentary terms in which your countrymen were spoken of by Lord John? In defence of the Fatherland you ought to take up the pen and in a stirring epic record how you Germans didn't fight! Don't get excited at this. Philosophy, my Dear B... will bear you above it all, the system always adapted by

Your's sincerely .

ALEXANDER M... GH.

LETTERS ON ELOCUTION.

LETTER I.

My Dear son,

Agreeably to my promise, I have taken up my pen for the purpose of giving you some directions for reading in a graceful, rational and perspicuous manner; and I trust you will give them the attention they merit.

In the first place, then, you must take care to pronounce every syllable articulately, that is, clearly, distinctly and fully. For this purpose, open your mouth freely. Indeed, I must inform you, that the acquisition of a distinct articulation is a circumstance of infinite consequence, both in reading and speaking. What Chesterfield says, is perfectly right, that we should "open our teeth." Milton, in his "letter on education" observes that we Englishmen, being far northerly, do not *open our mouths* in the cold air, *wide enough*, to grace a southern tongue, but are observed by all other nations to speak exceedingly close and inward. This observation you will do well to attend to.

Labour, therefore, to acquire a clear, perfect and graceful enunciation; and avoid a mumbling and muttering way of speaking; and you will greatly please

Your affectionate Father.

LETTER II.

I shall in this letter, my dear boy, give you some directions as to the management of your voice. Let that be soft and gentle, not loud nor boisterous. A mellow voice, which may be improved, if not acquired, by exercise and habit, is pleasing, both in speaking and reading. On the contrary, violence and clamour are extremely vulgar and disagreeable. They exhaust your breath and render your pronounciation indistinct and inarticulate. Homer's description of the eloquence

of Ulysses gives us a complete idea of that mild and graceful enunciation which every person should endeavour to acquire.

“But when he speaks what elocution flows!
Soft as the fleeces of descendig snows,
The copious accents fall with easy art;
Melting they fall and sink into the heart.”

Your affectionate Father.

LETTER III.

Let me beg of you, my dear son, to be very particular in not reading too fast. Read slowly and deliberately, carefully observing every stop, and every emphatical word. I dare say you recollect with what earnestness I requested your master to guard you against reading in too hasty a manner. This fault is the source of almost every other. No person can read properly, much less gracefully, if he reads in a hurry. He will go on from sentence to sentence with a constant hiatus, like one who has run himself out of breath.

But while I direct you to read slowly and deliberately, I do not intend that you should dwell on every syllable, and pronounce your word with an inanimate languor. No, there is a medium to be observed in this, as in everything else; and that medium is consistent with sprightliness and energy; as there is a difference between walking with grace, and crawling along with the motion of a snail.

Your affectionate Father.

LETTER IV.

You well know, my son, that I had frequently desired you to let the tone of your voice in reading be the same as it is in speaking. Do not, I beseech you, affect to change the natural and easy sound with which you speak in conversation for that formal and unnatural tone which some people assume

in reading. This fault arises from too great an exertion of the voice and the habit of extending it beyond its natural ability. In common discourse the speaker is obliged to pause while he thinks, which gives him time to breathe. But the reader, who sees every thing before him, has no occasion to think, and therefore is apt to run on, without intermission, till his breath is exhausted and the natural tone of his voice is destroyed. To avoid this gross impropriety, we should read no faster than we usually speak.

In the next place we should endeavour to enter into the sense and spirit of the author, and feel what is expressed. This can only be done, I think, by reading deliberately and attending closely to the subject. Without some attention to this rule, your reading, you may be assured, will ever be insipid and uninteresting.

Your affectionate Father.

Leipzig: Imprenta de F. A. Brockhaus.

Fé de Erratas.

| | | | |
|-----------|----------------|--------------------|--------------------|
| Página 16 | línea 8 de ab. | dice: é mesas | léase: mesas |
| » 25 | » 6 | » los que | » los á quienes. |
| » 31 | » 10 | » demas | » de más. |
| » 36 | » 19 | » se siempre alaba | » se alaba siempre |
| » 48 | » 17 | » su señor madre | » su señora madre |
| » 51 | » 7 de ab. | » á mas | » amás |
| » 86 | » 13 | » le ví cantar | » le oí cantar. |
| » 90 | » 4 | » Par mas | » Por mas |
| » 96 | » 14 | » to come forwards | » to come forward. |
| » 105 | » 12 de ab. | » Como | » Tomo |
| » 107 | » 25 | » principiado | » principiada. |
| » 116 | » 13 | » "La union de | » La union da. |
| » 146 | » 6 de ab. | » or o which | » or of which. |

EN LA MISMA LIBRERIA SE VENDEN:

NUEVA
GRAMÁTICA GRIEGA.

CURSO
TEÓRICO-PRÁCTICO

POR

J. J. BRAUN.

NUEVA
GRAMÁTICA ALEMANA.

CURSO
TEÓRICO-PRÁCTICO

POR

J. J. BRAUN.
